

# Nissaye

## (p-c-e)**Bhikkhunīpātimokkha**

比丘尼波提木叉 (巴漢英對照及文法分析)

from Chattha Saṅgāyana (CS)

Released by Dhammadvassārāma

2552 B.E. (2008A.D.)

### Contents of Bhikkhunīpātimokkha [ 目 錄 ]

標示 ‘\*’ 只有在比丘尼波提木叉，不在比丘波提木叉

‘\*’ only in Bhikkhunīpātimokkha, not in Bhikkhupātimokkha

Pubbakaraṇam-4(預備工作(四項)) .....	1
Pubbakiccam-5(前置作業(五項)).....	1
Pattakalla-aṅgā-4(時機成熟的成分(四項)) .....	1
<b>Nidānuddeso 因緣.....</b>	<b>2</b>
<b>Pārājikuddeso 驅擯戒 .....</b>	<b>5</b>
1.Methunadhammasikkhāpadam 不淨行(=Bhikkhu Pārājiko 1).....	5
2.Adinnādānasikkhāpadam 偷盜(超過五個摩沙迦)(=Bhikkhu Pārājiko 2) .....	6
3.Manussaviggasikkhāpadam 奪取人命(=Bhikkhu Pārājiko 3).....	7
4.Uttarimanussadhammasikkhāpadam(妄稱得)上人法(=Bhikkhu Pārājiko 4) .....	9
*5.Ubbhajāñumandalikāsikkhāpadam(鎖骨以下、)膝蓋以上(撫摸等).....	10
6.Vajjappaticchādikāsikkhāpadam 覆藏罪(不告大眾某比丘尼犯驅擯)(=Bhikkhu P 64) ....	11
*7.Ukkhittānuvattikāsikkhāpadam 追隨被寵黜(之比丘).....	12
*8.Aṭṭhavatthukāsikkhāpadam 八事驅擯.....	14
<b>Saṅghādisesuddeso 僧殘戒.....</b>	<b>16</b>
*1.Ussayavādikāsikkhāpadam 訴訟.....	17
*2.Corīvuṭṭhāpikāsikkhāpadam(接受)賊女受戒.....	17
*3.Ekagāmantaragamanasikkhāpadam 獨往村(等).....	18
*4.Ukkhittaka-osāraṇasikkhāpadam(將)被寵黜者復權.....	19
*5.Bhojanapatiggaṇhaṇapāṭhama sikkhāpadam 接受食物(1) .....	20
*6.Bhojanapatiggaṇhaṇadutiyasikkhāpadam 接受食物(2) .....	21
7.Sañcarittasikkhāpadam 作媒人(=Bhikkhu Saṅghādiseso 5).....	22
8.Duṭṭhadosasikkhāpadam 惡意、瞋恨(無憑據地毀謗比丘尼)(=Bhikkhu Saṅghādiseso 8).....	22
9.Aññabhāgiyasikkhāpadam 拿鬮涉它案作藉口(毀謗為犯驅擯)(=Bhikkhu Saṅghādiseso 9).....	23
*10.Sikkhāmpaccācikkhaṇasikkhāpadam 捨學(等).....	24
*11.Adhikaraṇakupitasikkhāpadam 停止瞋恨.....	27
*12.Pāpasamācārapāṭhama sikkhāpadam 惡行(1) .....	29
*13.Pāpasamācāradutiyasikkhāpadam 惡行(2) .....	31
14.Saṅghabhedakasikkhāpadam 分裂僧團(=Bhikkhu Saṅghādiseso 10).....	34
15.Bhedānuvattakasikkhāpadam 與分裂僧團的比丘同黨(=Bhikkhu Saṅghādiseso 11) .....	36
16.Dubbacasisikkhāpadam 惡名望(=Bhikkhu Saṅghādiseso 12) .....	38
17.Kuladūsakasikkhāpadam 惡行敗壞在家人(=Bhikkhu Saṅghādiseso 17) .....	41
<b>Nissaggiyapācittiya捨懶戒 .....</b>	<b>46</b>
<b>Pattavaggopāṭhamo 鉢品第一 .....</b>	<b>47</b>

*1.Pattasannicayasikkhāpadam 團積鉢 .....	47
*2.Akālacīvarabhbhājanasikkhāpadam 以非時衣(為時衣而)分配.....	47
*3.Cīvaraparivattanasikkhāpadam 交換衣(之後奪回).....	47
*4.Aññaviññāpanasikkhāpadam 索求(更索求) .....	48
*5.Aññacetāpanasikkhāpadam 購某物(後換購某物) .....	48
*6.Paṭhamasaṅghikacetāpanasikkhāpadam 僧伽購某物(1).....	49
*7.Dutiyasaṅghikacetāpanasikkhāpadam 僧伽購某物(2).....	49
*8.Paṭhamagaṇikacetāpanasikkhāpadam 大眾購某物(1) .....	49
*9.Dutiyagaṇikacetāpanasikkhāpadam 大眾購某物(2).....	50
*10.Puggalikacetāpanasikkhāpadam 個人購某物(1) .....	50
<b>Cīvaravaggodutiyo 衣品第二 .....</b>	<b>51</b>
*11.Garupāvuranaśikkhāpadam 求重衣者(最高可值四個「康沙」) .....	51
*12.Lahupāvuranaśikkhāpadam 求輕衣者(最高可值兩個半「康沙」) .....	51
13.Kathinasikkhāpadam 迦提那(捨後, 額外的布最多可存十天) (=Bhikkhu NP 1) .....	51
14.Udositasikkhāpadam 離開三衣過夜(=Bhikkhu NP 2) .....	52
15.Akālacīvarasikkhāpadam 非時衣(=Bhikkhu NP 3).....	52
16.Aññatātakavīññattisikkhāpadam(向沒有親戚關係者)乞求衣(=Bhikkhu NP 6).....	53
17.Tatuttarisikkhāpadam 接受非親戚在家人的布料(=Bhikkhu NP 7) .....	54
18.Pathama-upakkhaṭasikkhāpadam(指定非親戚在家人)準備布料(1) (=Bhikkhu NP 8) ...	54
19.Dutiya-upakkhaṭasikkhāpadam(指定非親戚在家人)準備布料(2) (=Bhikkhu NP 9).....	56
20.Rājasikkhāpadam 向保管衣資者索取布料(=Bhikkhu NP 10).....	57
<b>Pattavaggotatiyo 鉢品第三 .....</b>	<b>62</b>
21.Rūpiyasikkhāpadam 接受金銀(=Bhikkhu NP 18).....	62
22.Rūpiyasariñvohārasikkhāpadam 買賣金銀(=Bhikkhu NP 19) .....	62
23.Kayavikkayasikkhāpadam 買賣物品(=Bhikkhu NP 20).....	62
24.Ūnapañcabandhanasikkhāpadam 以未滿五綴(的鉢換新鉢) (=Bhikkhu NP 22).....	63
25.Bhesajjasikkhāpadam 七日藥(儲存最多儲存七天) (=Bhikkhu NP 23) .....	64
26.Cīvara-acchindanasikkhāpadam(贈衣後)奪回衣(=Bhikkhu NP 25) .....	64
27.Suttaviññattisikkhāpadam 乞求紗線(請織工們織成布料) (=Bhikkhu NP 26) .....	65
28.Mahāpesakārasikkhāpadam(未受請而請)織工織布(=Bhikkhu NP 27).....	65
29.Accekaṭīvarasikkhāpadam 急施衣(存放超過做衣服的時間) (=Bhikkhu NP 28) .....	67
30.Pariñatasikkhāpadam 轉移(僧團的物品轉為己有) (=Bhikkhu NP 30).....	67
<b>Suddhapācittiyā(百六十六波逸提法) .....</b>	<b>69</b>
<b>Lasuṇavaggopāṭhamo 蒜品第一 .....</b>	<b>69</b>
*1.Lasunāsikkhāpadam(吃)蒜 .....	69
*2.Sambādhalomasikkhāpadam(剃除)陰毛 .....	69
*3.Talaghātakasikkhāpadam 掌摶 .....	70
*4.Jatumatṭhakasikkhāpadam(使用)樹膠生支 .....	70
*5.Udakasuddhikasikkhāpadam 以水洗淨(密處).....	70
*6.Upatitṭhanasikkhāpadam 伺候(作飯的比丘).....	71
*7.Āmakadhaññāsikkhāpadam(乞或令乞)生穀 .....	71
*8.Paṭhama-uccārachāḍḍanasikkhāpadam 棄大便(等)(1).....	71
*9.Dutiya-uccārachāḍḍanasikkhāpadam 棄大便(等)(1).....	72
*10.Naccagītasikkhāpadam(往觀聽)舞蹈、唱歌 .....	72
<b>Rattandhakāravaggodutiyo 暗夜品第二 .....</b>	<b>72</b>
*11.Rattandhakārasikkhāpadam 暗夜(與男人一對一站著交談) .....	72
*12.Paticchannokāsasikkhāpadam 隱密處(與男人一對一站著)交談 .....	73
*13.Ajjhokāsallapanasikkhāpadam 空地(與男子一對一站著)交談.....	73
*14.Dutiyika-uyyojanasikkhāpadam 打發友伴離去 .....	73
*15.Anāpucchāpakkamanasikkhāpadam 不告(主人)而離去 .....	74
*16.Anāpucchā-abhimisīdanasikkhāpadam 不告(主人)而入座.....	74
*17.Anāpucchāsantharañjasikkhāpadam 不告(主人)而鋪床座 .....	74
*18.Para-ujjhāpanakasikkhāpadam(因誤解、誤會而)激怒他人 .....	75
*19.Para-abhisapanasikkhāpadam 咒詛他人 .....	75

*20.Rodanasikkhāpadam(打自己而)哭泣.....	75
<b>Naggavaggo 裸體品第三 .....</b>	<b>76</b>
*21.Naggasikkhāpadam 裸體(沐浴) .....	76
22.Udakasātikasikkhāpadam 沐浴衣(=Bhikkhu P 91) .....	76
*23.Cīvarasibbanasikkhāpadam(拆解某比丘尼衣之後)縫衣.....	76
*24.Saṅghāticārasikkhāpadam(過五日,不)穿僧伽梨.....	77
*25.Cīvarasañkamanīyasikkhāpadam 穿著不能確定之衣.....	77
*26.Gaṇacīvarasikkhāpadam 妨礙大眾(得衣) .....	77
*27.Paṭibāhanasikkhāpadam 阻擋(如法分配衣) .....	78
*28.Cīvaradānasikkhāpadam 贈衣(給無家者等) .....	78
*29.Kāla-atikkamanasikkhāpadam(期待未確定之衣而)過衣時.....	78
*30.Kathinuddhārasikkhāpadam(阻擋如法)取消迦繕那(利益).....	78
<b>Tuvattavaggo catuttho 分享品第四 .....</b>	<b>79</b>
*31.Ekamañcatuvatṭanasikkhāpadam(兩人)同睡一床.....	79
*32.Ekatharaṇatuvatṭanasikkhāpadam(兩人)同蓋一被 .....	79
*33.Aphāsukaranasikkhāpadam(對比丘尼故意)惱亂 .....	79
*34.Na-upatṭhāpanasikkhāpadam 不伺候(同住之生病比丘尼).....	79
*35.Nikkadḍhanasikkhāpadam(給住屋後,瞋怒不喜即)趕走.....	80
*36.Saṁsaṭṭhasikkhāpadam(與居士)住得親近 .....	80
*37.Antoratṭhasikkhāpadam 在國內(有危險,卻不結伴而行) .....	81
*38.Tiroratṭhasikkhāpadam 在國外(有危險,卻不結伴而行).....	82
*39.Antovassasikkhāpadam 於雨期中遊行.....	82
*40.Cārikanapakkamanasikkhāpadam(雨安居後,)不出遊行.....	82
<b>Cittāgāravaggo pañcamo 畫室品第五 .....</b>	<b>83</b>
*41.Rājāgārasikkhāpadam 參觀王宮(等).....	83
*42.Āsandiparibhuñjanasikkhāpadam 享用長椅(等) .....	83
*43.Suttakantanasikkhāpadam 紡紗.....	83
*44.Gihiveyyāvaccasikkhāpadam 為在家人作事 .....	83
*45.Adhikaraṇasikkhāpadam 平息(諍事) .....	84
46.Bhojanadānasikkhāpadam(親手)給食(=Bhikkhu P 41) .....	84
*47.Āvasathacīvarasikkhāpadam 月華衣(繼續使用).....	84
*48.Āvasathavihārasikkhāpadam 不捨住處(而出遊) .....	85
*49.Tiracchānavijjāpariyāpuñjanasikkhāpadam 遍學畜生咒 .....	85
*50.Tiracchānavijjāvācanasikkhāpadam 教畜生咒 .....	85
<b>Ārāmavaggo chaṭṭho 僧園品第六 .....</b>	<b>85</b>
*51.Ārāmapavisanasikkhāpadam(未經同意而)進入比丘僧園 .....	86
*52.Bhikkhu-akkosanasikkhāpadam 辱罵比丘 .....	86
*53.Gaṇaparibhāsanasikkhāpadam 責罵大眾 .....	86
*54.Pavāritasikkhāpadam 已受邀請 .....	86
*55.Kulamaccharinīsikkhāpadam 慚俗家 .....	87
*56.Abhikkukāvāsasikkhāpadam 無比丘住處(入安居) .....	87
*57.Apavāraṇasikkhāpadam(於二部僧中)未行自恣 .....	87
*58.Ovādasikkhāpadam(不為)教誡或共住而往 .....	87
*59.Ovādūpasañkamanasikkhāpadam(應於比丘僧)問布薩及求教誡 .....	88
*60.Pasākhejātasikkhāpadam 肢節生癰瘡(單獨給男子作醫療) .....	88
<b>Gabbhinivago sattamo 孕婦品第七 .....</b>	<b>89</b>
*61.Gabbhinīsikkhāpadam 令孕婦(受具戒) .....	89
*62.Pāyantīsikkhāpadam 令有幼兒之婦女(受具戒) .....	89
*63.Paṭhamasikkhamānasikkhāpadam(令未二年學六法戒之)式叉摩那受具戒(1) .....	89
*64.Dutiyasikkhamānasikkhāpadam(未得許可令二年學六法戒之)式叉摩那受具戒(1)....	89
*65.Pathamagihigatasikkhāpadam 有性行為的女人受具戒者(1) .....	90
*66.Dutiyagihigatasikkhāpadam 有性行為的女人受具戒者(2).....	90
*67.Tatiyagihigatasikkhāpadam 有性行為的女人受具戒者(3).....	91
*68.Paṭhamasahajīvinīsikkhāpadam 不教護弟子(1).....	91

*69.Pavattinīnānubandhanasikkhāpadam	不隨(師)學.....	91
*70.Dutiyasahajīvinīsikkhāpadam	不教護弟子(2) .....	92
<b>Kumāribhūtavaggoatthamo 童女品第八.....</b>		<b>92</b>
71.Pathamakumāribhūtasikkhāpadam	童女受具戒者(1) (=Bhikkhunī P 65).....	92
*72.Dutiyakumāribhūtasikkhāpadam	童女受具戒者(2).....	92
*73.Tatiyakumāribhūtasikkhāpadam	童女受具戒者(3).....	93
*74.Ūnadvādasavassasikkhāpadam	未滿十二夏(令人受具戒).....	93
*75.Paripuṇṇadvādasavassasikkhāpadam	滿十二夏(令人受具戒) .....	93
*76.Khiyyanadhammasikkhāpadam	事後抱怨.....	94
*77.Paṭhamasikkhamānanavutthāpanasikkhāpadam	不使式叉摩那受具戒(1).....	94
*78.Dutiyasikkhamānanavutthāpanasikkhāpadam	不使式叉摩那受具戒(2).....	94
*79.Sokāvāsasikkhāpadam	陷入幽怨(的式叉摩那使受具戒) .....	95
*80.Ananuññātasikkhāpadam	(令父母及丈夫)未聽許(之式叉摩那受具戒) .....	95
*81.Pārivāsikasikkhāpadam	由別住者(承諾式叉摩那受具戒).....	96
*82.Anuvassasikkhāpadam	年年(使受具戒) .....	96
*83.Ekavassasikkhāpadam	一年(度兩人受具戒) .....	96
<b>Chattupāhanavaggonavamo 持傘著履品第九.....</b>		<b>96</b>
*84.Chattupāhanasikkhāpadam	持傘著履.....	97
*85.Yānasikkhāpadam	乘車 .....	97
*86.Saṅghāñisikkhāpadam	纏腰布 .....	97
*87.Ithālāñikārasikkhāpadam	穿戴婦女裝飾物 .....	97
*88.Gandhavaṇṇakasikkhāpadam	塗香、施粉 .....	97
*89.Vāsitakasikkhāpadam	塗香粉、油粉.....	98
*90.Bhikkhuni-ummaddāpanasikkhāpadam	使比丘尼揉(或按摩) .....	98
*91.Sikkhamāna-ummaddāpanasikkhāpadam	使式叉摩那揉(或按摩) .....	98
*92.Sāmanerī-ummaddāpanasikkhāpadam	使沙彌尼揉(或按摩) .....	98
*93.Gihini-ummaddāpanasikkhāpadam	使白衣女揉(或按摩) .....	99
*94.Anāpucchāsikkhāpadam	(於比丘前)不問而坐 .....	99
*95.Pañhāpucchanasikkhāpadam	(未得許可而)問比丘 .....	99
*96.Asarīnkaccikasikkhāpadam	不著僧祇支(入村).....	99
<b>Musāvādavaggodasamo 妄語品第十.....</b>		<b>100</b>
97.Musāvādasikkhāpadam	妄語(=Bhikkhu P 1).....	100
98.Omasavādasikkhāpadam	辱罵(=Bhikkhu P 2).....	100
99.Pesuññāsikkhāpadam	誹謗(=Bhikkhu P 3) .....	100
100.Padasodhammasikkhāpadam	逐句地(一起誦讀法) (=Bhikkhu P 4).....	100
101.Pathamasahaseyyasikkhāpadam	(與未受具足戒)同床睡覺(1) (=Bhikkhu P 5) .....	101
102.Dutiyasahaseyyasikkhāpadam	(與男人)同床睡覺(2) (=Bhikkhu P 6) .....	101
103.Dhammadesanāsikkhāpadam	說法(超過五六句) (=Bhikkhu P 7) .....	101
104.Bhūtārocanasikkhāpadam	愛真實(告訴未受具者證得上人法) (=Bhikkhu P 8).....	101
105.Duṭṭhullārocanasikkhāpadam	(告訴未受具比丘尼的)重罪(=Bhikkhu P 9).....	102
106.Pathavīkhaṇanasikkhāpadam	挖掘土地(=Bhikkhu P 10) .....	102
<b>Bhūtagāmavaggoekādasamo 植物品第十一.....</b>		<b>102</b>
107.Bhūtagāmasikkhāpadam	(砍伐)植物(=Bhikkhu P 11) .....	102
108.Aññāvādakasikkhāpadam	轉移其它話題(顧左右而言他) (=Bhikkhu P 12) .....	103
109.Ujjhāpanakasikkhāpadam	(公開)指責(=Bhikkhu P 13) .....	103
110.Pathamasenāsanasikkhāpadam	臥具(不收就離開)(一) (=Bhikkhu P 14) .....	103
111.Dutiyasenāsanasikkhāpadam	臥具(不收就離開)(二) (=Bhikkhu P 15) .....	104
112.Anupakhajjasikkhāpadam	擠開(先到僧房的比丘尼) (=Bhikkhu P 16) .....	104
113.Nikkadḍhanasikkhāpadam	趕人出房(=Bhikkhu P 17) .....	105
114.Vehāsakutisikkhāpadam	閣樓(使用可拆卸的床椅) (=Bhikkhu P 18) .....	105
115.Mahallakavīhārasikkhāpadam	(建造)大房子(=Bhikkhu P 19).....	105
116.Sappāṇakasikkhāpadam	有生物的水(澆到草或地上) (=Bhikkhu P 20) .....	106
<b>Bhojanavaggodvādasamo 食品第十二.....</b>		<b>106</b>
117.Āvasathapiṇḍasikkhāpadam	在公共施食處(取食一次) (=Bhikkhu P 31) .....	106

118.Gaṇabhojanasikkhāpadam 粋食(四人以上一起受邀吃飯) (=Bhikkhu P 32) .....	107
119.Kāṇamātusikkhāpadam 瞎女(未分享糕點或乾餅) (=Bhikkhu P 34) .....	107
120.Vikālabhojanasikkhāpadam 非時食(=Bhikkhu P 37).....	108
121.Sannidhikārakasikkhāpadam 儲存(超過正午的食物) (=Bhikkhu P 38).....	108
122.Dantaponasikkhāpadam 齒木(=Bhikkhu P 40).....	108
123.Uyyojanasikkhāpadam(托鉢途中)趕走同伴(=Bhikkhu P 42).....	109
124.Sabhojanasikkhāpadam 有情欲的人家(=Bhikkhu P 43).....	109
125.Rahopaticchannasikkhāpadam 單獨與男人坐在隱蔽處(=Bhikkhu P 44).....	110
126.Rahonisajjasikkhāpadam 單獨與男人共坐(=Bhikkhu P 45) .....	110
<b>Cārittavaggoterasamo 拜訪品第十三.....</b>	<b>110</b>
127.Cārttasikkhāpadam(用餐前後到其他人家)拜訪(=Bhikkhu P 46) .....	110
128.Mahānāmasikkhāpadam 向摩訶男居士(索求供養) (=Bhikkhu P 47).....	111
129.Uyyuttasenāsikkhāpadam(往觀)出征的軍隊(=Bhikkhu P 48) .....	111
130.Senāvāsasikkhāpadam 軍中住(=Bhikkhu P 49) .....	112
131.Uyyodhikasikkhāpadam(住軍中觀)演習(=Bhikkhu P 50).....	112
132.Surāpānasikkhāpadam 喝穀酒(等) (=Bhikkhu P 51) .....	112
133.Aṅgulipatodakasikkhāpadam 手指搔癢(=Bhikkhu P 52).....	113
134.Hasadhammasikkhāpadam(水中)嬉戲(=Bhikkhu P 53) .....	113
135.Anādariyasikkhāpadam 不恭敬(=Bhikkhu P 54) .....	113
136.Bhirūpanasikkhāpadam 嘻驚(比丘尼) (=Bhikkhu P 55).....	113
<b>Jotivaggocuddasamo 點火品第十四 .....</b>	<b>113</b>
137.Jotisikkhāpadam 點火(取暖) (=Bhikkhu P 56) .....	113
138.Nahānasikkhāpadam 洗澡(半個月超過一次) (=Bhikkhu P 57) .....	114
139.Dubbanāṇakaraṇasikkhāpadam(新衣染)難看的顏色(=Bhikkhu P 58).....	114
140.Vikappanasikkhāpadam 分享衣服(對方沒有捨出就使用) (=Bhikkhu P 59) .....	115
141.Apanidhāpanasikkhāpadam 藏匿比丘尼衣鉢(等)(=Bhikkhu P 60).....	116
142.Sañciccasikkhāpadam 故意(奪命) (=Bhikkhu P 61) .....	116
143.Sappāṇakasikkhāpadam 有生物(的水) (=Bhikkhu P 62) .....	116
144.Ukkotanasikkhāpadam 摾亂(明知已經依法處置的案件) (=Bhikkhu P 63).....	116
145.Theyyasatthasikkhāpadam 與賊隊相約(=Bhikkhu P 66) .....	117
146.Ariṭṭhasikkhāpadam 殘酷的(主張淫欲不會障礙修行) (=Bhikkhu P 68) .....	117
<b>Dīṭhivaggopannarasamo 邪見品第十五 .....</b>	<b>119</b>
147.Ukkhittasambhogasikkhāpadam.中止共食(=Bhikkhu P 69).....	119
148.Kaṇṭakasikkhāpadam 障礙(法) (=Bhikkhu P 70) .....	119
149.Sahadhammikasikkhāpadam 依法(規勸) (=Bhikkhu P 71).....	121
150.Vilekhanasikkhāpadam 迷惑小小學處(=Bhikkhu P 72) .....	122
151.Mohanasikkhāpadam(不因)無知(而開脫罪狀) (=Bhikkhu P 73) .....	123
152.Pahārasikkhāpadam 打(比丘尼) (=Bhikkhu P 74).....	124
153.Talasattikasikkhāpadam(舉)掌作武器(=Bhikkhu P 75).....	125
154.Amūlakasikkhāpadam 無憑無據地(毀謗比丘尼) (=Bhikkhu P 76) .....	125
155.Sañciccasikkhāpadam 故意(導致比丘尼追悔) (=Bhikkhu P 77) .....	125
156.Upassutisikkhāpadam(比丘尼諍論後)竊聽(=Bhikkhu P 78) .....	125
<b>Dhammikavaggosolasamo 依法品第十六 .....</b>	<b>126</b>
157.Kammappaṭibāhanasikkhāpadam 拒絕羯磨(=Bhikkhu P 79).....	126
158.Chandarū-adatvāgamanasikkhāpadam 沒有表明同意(如法羯磨) (=Bhikkhu P 80)....	126
159.Dubbalasikkhāpadam 批評如法分配衣服(=Bhikkhu P 81).....	127
160.Pariṇāmanasikkhāpadam 轉移(供養) (=Bhikkhu P 82) .....	127
161.Ratanasikkhāpadam 寶物(=Bhikkhu P 84) .....	127
162.Sūcigharasikkhāpadam 針盒(=Bhikkhu P 86) .....	128
163.Mañcapīṭhasikkhāpadam 新床或長板凳(=Bhikkhu P 87) .....	128
164.Tūlonaddhasikkhāpadam 鋪蓋棉花(在床或長板凳上) (=Bhikkhu P 88) .....	129
165.Kanḍuppaṭicchādisikkhāpadam 覆瘞衣(=Bhikkhu P 90) .....	129
166.Nandasikkhāpadam 難陀(比丘尼叫人做衣服超過善逝衣尺寸) (=Bhikkhu P 92) ....	130
<b>Pāṭidesanīyā 八應悔過戒(八提舍尼法).....</b>	<b>131</b>

*1.Sappiviññāpanasikkhāpadam(無病)索求酥	131
*2.Telaviññāpanasikkhāpadam(無病)索求油	132
*3.Madhuviviññāpanasikkhāpadam(無病)索求蜜	132
*4.Phāṇitaviviññāpanasikkhāpadam(無病)索求糖蜜	133
*5.Macchaviviññāpanasikkhāpadam(無病)索求魚肉	133
*6.Māṁsaviññāpanasikkhāpadam(無病)索求肉	133
*7.Khīraviññāpanasikkhāpadam(無病)索求乳	134
*8.Dadhiviviññāpanasikkhāpadam(無病)索求酪	134
<b>Sekhiyā 應當學習的戒</b>	<b>136</b>
<b>Parimañḍalavaggopāṭhamo 圓整品第一</b>	<b>136</b>
1.~2.Parimañḍalasikkhāpadam 圓整(穿內裙)	136
3.~4.Suppaṭicchannasikkhāpadam 整齊包好(衣服)	137
5.~6.Susarīvutasisikkhāpadam 守護威儀	137
7.~8.Okkhittacakkhusikkhāpadam 垂目而視	137
9.~10.Ukkhittakasikkhāpadam 不拉高(衣服)	138
<b>Ujjagghikavaggodutyo 大笑品第二</b>	<b>138</b>
11.~14.Ujjagghikasikkhāpadam 大笑	138
<b>Uccasaddasikkhāpadam 大聲戒</b>	<b>139</b>
15.~16.Kāyappacālakasikkhāpadam 不晃動身體	139
17.~18.Bāhuppacālakasikkhāpadam 不揮擺手臂	139
19.~20.Sīsappacālakasikkhāpadam 搖頭晃腦	140
<b>Khambhakatavaggotatiyo 扱腰品第三</b>	<b>140</b>
21.~22.Khambhakatasikkhāpadam 扱腰	140
23.~24.Oguṇṭhitasikkhāpadam 包著頭	141
25.Ukkuṭikasikkhāpadam 以腳尖或腳踵	141
26.Pallatthikasikkhāpadam 抱住膝蓋	141
27.Sakkaccapatiggahañasikkhāpadam 感激接受	142
28.Pattasaññinīpatiggahañasikkhāpadam 注視鉢接受	142
29.Samasūpakapatiggahañasikkhāpadam 接受成比例的羹飯	142
30.Samatittikasikkhāpadam 相等(鉢)邊緣	142
<b>Sakkaccavaggocatutto 感激品第四</b>	<b>143</b>
31.Sakkaccabhuñjanasikkhāpadam 感激	143
32.Pattasaññinībhujanjasikkhāpadam 注視鉢吃	143
33.Sapadānasikkhāpadam 順序地(用餐)	143
34.Samasūpakasikkhāpadam 等(比例)菜	143
35.Nathūpakatasikkhāpadam 不從頂端揉捏食物而吃	143
36.Odanappaṭicchādananasikkhāpadam 覆藏飯	144
37.Sūpodanaviviññātisikkhāpadam 要求飯菜	144
38.Ujjhānasaññinīsikkhāpadam 心存不滿(注意他人的鉢)	144
39.Kabalasikkhāpadam(不做過大的)飯糰	144
40.Ālopasikkhāpadam 一口(食物)	145
<b>Kabalavaggopāñcamo 飯糰品第五</b>	<b>145</b>
41.Anāhaṭasikkhāpadam 未拿來(張口待食)	145
42.Bhuñjamānasikkhāpadam 食時(勿放整個手指入嘴)	145
43.Sakabalasikkhāpadam 含飯糰(說話)	145
44.Piñḍukkhepakasikkhāpadam 投入食物(入口)	145
45.Kabalāvacchedakasikkhāpadam 咬斷飯糰	146
46.Avaganḍakārakasikkhāpadam(大口)張頰(吃)	146
47.Hatthaniddhunakasikkhāpadam 用手地(吃)	146
48.Sitthāvakārakasikkhāpadam 飯粒散落	146
49.Jivhānicchārakasikkhāpadam 舌頭伸出	146
50.Cupucupakārakasikkhāpadam 作咀嚼聲	147
<b>Surusuruvaggochattho 嘸嘸品第六</b>	<b>147</b>

51.Surusurukārakasikkhāpadam(吃時)作嚙嚙聲 .....	147
52.Hatthanillehakasikkhāpadam 舔手(吃).....	147
53.Pattanillehakasikkhāpadam 不舔舖 .....	147
54.Oṭṭhanillehakasikkhāpadam 不舔嘴唇 .....	147
55.Sāmisasikkhāpadam 沾過食物(的手).....	148
56.Sasitthakasikkhāpadam 含飯粒(任意倒棄) .....	148
57.Chattapāṇisikkhāpadam 手(拿)遮陽傘.....	148
58.Daṇḍapāṇisikkhāpadam 手(拿)拐杖 .....	148
59.Satthapāṇisikkhāpadam 手(拿)刀.....	149
60.Āvudhapāṇisikkhāpadam 手(拿)武器.....	149
<b>Pādukavaggosattamo 涼鞋品第七.....</b>	<b>149</b>
61.Pādukasikkhāpadam 穿涼鞋.....	149
62.Upāhanasikkhāpadam 穿鞋子.....	149
63.Yānasikkhāpadam 坐在車上.....	149
64.Sayanasakiikkhāpadam 躺在床上.....	150
65.Pallatthikasikkhāpadam 抱住膝蓋坐著.....	150
66.Veṭhasikkhāpadam 繩頭巾 .....	150
67.Ogunṭhitasakiikkhāpadam 包住頭 .....	150
68.Chamāsikkhāpadam 坐位子 .....	151
69.Nīcāsanasakiikkhāpadam 坐高位.....	151
70.~71.Thitasakiikkhāpadam 坐著 .....	151
<b>Pacchatogacchantīsikkhāpadam 走在前面(等) .....</b>	<b>151</b>
72.Uppathenagacchantīsikkhāpadam(靠著)路邊走.....	152
73.Thitā-uccārasikkhāpadam 站著大(小)便.....	152
74.Harite-uccārasikkhāpadam 在農作物上大(小)便.....	152
75.Udake-uccārasikkhāpadam 在水上大(小)便 .....	153
<b>Adhikaraṇasamathā(七)解決案件的規則 .....</b>	<b>154</b>
1.當面法則 (Adhikaraṇa samathā 2. ).....	154
2.憶念法則 (Adhikaraṇa samathā 2. ).....	155
3.不再痴狂的法則 (Adhikaraṇa samathā 3. ) .....	155
4.自自 (Adhikaraṇa samathā 4. ) .....	155
5.服從多數 (Adhikaraṇa samathā 5. ) .....	155
6.處罰犯罪的人 (Adhikaraṇa samathā 5. ) .....	155
7.取銷 (Adhikaraṇa samathā 7. ) .....	156

**(p-c-e)Bhikkhunīpātimokkha**

**比丘尼波提木叉 (巴漢英對照及文法分析)檔案說明**

本檔參照李鳳媚居士《巴利律比丘戒譯注》，及釋宗戒的《比丘波羅提木叉》。

比丘尼獨有的戒條由明法比丘翻譯及注釋。英語採用 Bhikkhu Thanisaro：

The Bhikkhunī Pātimokkha 的譯文，其中未譯出的部分，參照 Ven. Nāṇamoli

Thera : The Patimokkha



## Pubbakaranām-4(預備工作(四項))

Sammajjanī padīpo ca, udakaṁ āsanena ca;  
掃帚(f.) 燈(m.) 及 水(n.) 座位(n.s.Ins.) 及

Uposathassa etāni, “pubbakaraṇan”ti vuccati.  
布薩的 這些(p.Nom.) 預備工作 稱為

掃帚、燈、水、及座位，此等為布薩之預備工作。

## Pubbakiccam-5(前置作業(五項))

Chanda, pārisuddhi, utukkhānam, bhikkhunigaṇanā ca ovādo;  
(與)欲(=請假) 清淨 季節(utu+akkhāna) 比丘尼 算數 及 教誡

Uposathassa etāni, “pubbakiccan”ti vuccati.  
布薩的 這些(p.Nom.) 預備作業 稱為

與欲、清淨、季節宣告、算比丘尼人數、教誡，此等為布薩之前置作業。

## Pattakalla-aṅgā-4(時機成熟的成分(四項))

Uposatho, yāvatikā ca bhikkhunī kammappattā;  
布薩 僅僅 及 比丘尼 竝磨 達到

Sabhāgāpattiyo ca na vijjanti;  
同區的 應到達(出席) 及 不 (他們)存在

Vajjanīyā ca puggalā tasmīn na honti, “pattakallan”ti vuccati.  
應被避開的 及 諸人 在這些 無 有 達成預備好的 稱為

還有，布薩，及比丘尼來到羯磨，即是：同區該出席的出席及  
應被避開的不出席，這樣就是時機成熟。

Pubbakaraṇa-pubbakiccāni samāpetvā desitāpattikassa samaggassa  
準備工作 預備作業 完成後 指出 犯戒者 和合

bhikkhunisaṅghassa anumatiyā pātimokkham uddisitum ārādhanam karoma.  
比丘尼僧團的 同意，許可 波提木叉 背誦 邀請 (我們)作

預備工作、前置作業完成之後，擯除犯戒者，和合，  
經比丘尼僧團的同意，邀請背誦波提木叉。

~ ~ ~

Namo tassa bhagavato arahato sammāsambuddhassa.

# Bhikkhunīpātimokkhapāli

比丘尼<sup>1</sup>波提木叉

Nidānuddeso 因緣

Suṇātu	me	ayye	saṅgho.	Ajj'uposatho	paññaraso (cātuddasa <sup>2</sup> ).
聽	我	大姐	僧團	今日 布薩	第十五 (第十四)
suṇāti	aham	ayye	saṅgha	ajja uposatha	paññarasa, pañcadasa

3s.imp. 1s.Dat. f.p.Voc. m.s.Nom. ind. m.s.Nom. m.s.Nom.

諸大姐！請僧團聽我(說)。今天是第十五(十四)日的布薩。

Lady, let the Saṅgha hear me. Today is the Uposatha of the Fifteenth(fourteenth).

Yadi	saṅghassa	pattakallam,	saṅgho	uposatham	kareyya	pātimokkham	uddiseyya.
如果	僧團	已完成 準備	僧團	布薩	作	波提木叉	誦
yadi	saṅgha	patta+kalla	saṅgha	uposatha	karoti	pātimokkha	uddisati

ind. m.s.Gen. n.s.Nom. m.s.Nom. m.s.Acc. 3s.opt. m.s.Acc. 3s.opt.

如果僧團已經準備好了，僧團就可舉行布薩、誦波提木叉。

If there is complete preparedness for the Saṅgha carry out the Uposatha, let it recite the Pātimokkha.

Kim	saṅghassa	pubbakiccam?	Pārisuddhim	ayyāyo	ārocetha.
什麼	僧團	之前 做	清淨	大姐	宣告
ka	saṅgha	grd. of pubba+karoti	pārisuddhi		āroceti

n.s.Nom. m.s.Gen. n.s.Nom. f.s.Acc. f.p.Voc. 2p.imp.

僧團事前應做什麼？諸大姐！請宣告清淨。

What of preliminary duty for the Saṅgha? Let the ladies announce (any declaration of purity (given to them by absent bhikkhunīs).

Pātimokkham	uddisissāmi,	taṁ sabbeva	santā	sādhukam	suṇoma	manasikaroma.
波提木叉	將誦	它	所有 強調詞	現存	穩善地	聽 作意 注意
pātimokkha	uddisati	ta	sabba+eva	ppr. of atthi	sādhuka	suṇāti manasikaroti

m.s.Acc. 1s.fut. m.s.Acc. ind. ppr.(m.p.Nom.) adv. 1p.imp. 1p.imp.

我將誦波提木叉，讓我們所有在場的僧眾□都好好地注意聽它。

<sup>1</sup> Pāci.IV,214(CS:Pāci.pg.275) : Tatra yāyām bhikkhunī samaggena ubhatosaṅghena ānatticatutthena kammena akuppena thānārahena upasampannā, ayaṁ imasmīm atthe adhippetā bhikkhunīti.(此中，依和合的二部僧，白四羯摩，無異議通過受具之比丘尼，即此處所謂的比丘尼之意。)

<sup>2</sup> 如果第十五日誦戒為 paññaraso，第十四日誦誠為 cātuddasa 。

I shall recite the Pātimokkha. Let all present listen and attend carefully.

Yassā siyā āpatti, sā āvikareyya, asantiyā āpattiya tuṇhī bhavitabbam,  
 彼 有 犯戒 她 發露 表白 沒有 犯 沈默 變成  
 ya atthi āpajjati ta āvi+karoti a+santa āpajjati tuṇhi grd. of bhavati  
 f.s.Gen. 3s.opt. f.s.Nom. f.s.Nom. 3s.opt. f.s.Ins. f.s.Ins. ind. f.s.Nom.

如果有犯戒的人就要發露懺悔□；沒有犯的人應該保持沈默。

Should anyone have (committed) no fault, let her declare it. Should she have (committed) no fault, let her keep silent.

Tuṇhī bhāvena kho pan'āyyayo parisuddhā'ti vedissāmi.  
 沈默 保持 而 大姐 清淨 知道  
 tuṇhi bhāva<bhū kho pana parisuddhā +iti vedati  
 ind. m.s.Ins. adv. f.p.Acc. pp.(m.p.Nom.) ind. 1s.fut.

就因為保持沈默，我將知道諸大姐「是清淨的」。

I shall by their silence know that the ladies are pure.

Yathā kho pana paccekaputthassā veyyākaraṇam hoti,  
 如同 而 各別 被問的 回答 有  
 yathā kho pana pacceka+<pucchatī veyyākaraṇa < hū  
 ind. ind. f.s.Gen. n.s.Nom. 3s.pr.

如同各別被問的人會回答，

Just as one who is questioned individually has an answer (ready),

evam evam evarūpāya parisāya yāvatatiyam anussāvitam hoti.  
 同樣地 這樣的 集會 多達 第三的 宣布 有  
 evam evam eva+rūpa parisā yāva+tatiyam pp. of anu+ sāveti < hū  
 ind. ind. f.s.Loc. f.s.Loc. adv. m.s.Nom. 3s.pr.

就像那樣，在這樣的集會中有多達三次的宣布。

so too, (the Pātimokkha) having been proclaimed three times in such an assembly (as this),

Ya pana bhikkhunī yāvatatiyam anussāviyamāne saramānā santim āpattim  
 彼 連接詞 比丘尼 直到 第三次 宣布 記得 有 犯  
 ya pana bhikkhunī yāva+tatiyam pass.ppr. of anu+ sāveti ppr. of sarati ppr. of atthi āpajjati  
 f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom. adv. m.s.Loc. f.s.Nom. f.s.Acc. f.s.Acc.

而到了第三次宣布時，如果任何比丘尼記得(曾犯戒)而不發露(懺悔)有犯，

any lady when it is (so) proclaimed three times, who fails to declare an actual (undeclared) fault on remembering

n'āvikareyya, sampajānamusāvād'assā hoti.  
 不 發露 故意 妄語 語 她 是  
 na+āvi+karoti sampajāna+ musā+vāda ta < hū

3s.opt. adj. m.s.Nom. f.s.Gen. 3s.pr.

**她就是故意妄語。**

it is guilty of false speech in full awareness,

Sampajānamusāvādo kho pan'āyyāyo, antarāyiko dhammo vutto Bhagavatā.  
 故意 妄語 語 而 大姐 障礙 事項 所說 世尊  
 sampajāna+musā+vāda kho pana antarāyika dhamma pp. of vuccati Bhagavant  
 adj. m.s.Nom. ind. adv. f.p.Voc. m.s.Nom. m.s.Nom. m.s.Nom. m.s.Ins.

**諸大姐！而世尊說：故意妄語就是障礙(修行)的事情。**

The ladies, false speech in full awareness has been pronounced by the Blessed One to be a thing obstructive (to progress) ;

Tasmā saramānāya bhikkhuniyā āpannāya visuddāpekkhāya santī āpatti āvikātabbā,  
 因此 記得 比丘尼 犯 清淨 期待 有 犯 發露、表白  
 ta sarati of ppr. bhikkhunī āpajjati visuddha + apekkha atthi āpajjati āvi+karoti  
 m.s.Abl. f.s.Ins. f.s.Ins. pp.(f.s.Ins.) pp. adj.(f.s.Ins.) ppr.(f.s.Nom.) f.s.Nom. grd. (f.s.Nom.)

**因此，記得曾犯戒的比丘尼希望清淨就應該發露(懺悔)有犯。**

therefore any actual (undeclared) fault should be declared by a lady who remembers to have committed it and who looks for purification.

āvikatā hi'ssā phāsu hoti.  
 表白 真的 這(=她) 安樂 有  
 āvi+karoti hi + assa phāsu < hū  
 pp.(m.s.Abl.) ind. f.s.Gen. m.s.Nom. 3s.pr.

**因為發露懺，她才有安樂。**

To have declared it is for her good.

Uddittham kho, ayyāyo, nidānam.  
 詠 大姐 因緣  
 uddisati kho nidāna  
 pp.(n.s.Nom.) adv. f.p.Voc. n.s.Nom.

**諸大姐！因緣已經誦出了。**

The ladies, the recitation of the Introduction is finished.

Tatth'āyyayo pucchāmi : Kacci'ttha parisuddhā?  
 這裡 諸大姐 我問 是否 於此 清淨  
 tattha pucchati kacci ettha pp. of parisujjhati  
 adv. f.p.Acc. 1s.pr. ind. adv. m.p.Nom.

**在這裡我問諸大姐：「妳們於此(類戒)是否清淨？」**

Herein I ask the ladies : Are you pure in this?

Dutiyam'pi      pucchāmi : Kacci'ttha      parisuddhā?  
 第二 也      問      是否      於此      清淨  
 duttayām + api      pucchati      kacci      ettha      pp. of parisujjhati  
 m.s.Acc.   ind.      1s.pr.      ind.      adv.      m.p.Nom.

**第二次我再問：「妳們於此(類戒)是否清淨？」**

For the second times I ask the ladies : Are you pure in this?

Tatiyam'pi      pucchāmi: Kacci'ttha      parisuddhā?  
 第三 也      問      是否      於此      清淨  
 tatiyām + api      pucchati      kacci      ettha      pp. of parisujjhati  
 m.s.Acc.   ind.      1s.pr.      ind.      adv.      m.p.Nom.

**第三次再問：「妳們於此(類戒)是否清淨？」**

For the third times I ask the ladies : Are you pure in this?

Parisuddh'etth'āyyāyo, tasmā      tunhī, evam      etaṁ      dhārayāmi.  
 清淨      在此      大姐      因此      沈默      如此      這      認為  
 parisuddhā+ettha                        ta                        tunhi      evam      eta      dharati  
 pp.(m.p.Nom.) adv.   f.p.Nom.   m.s.Abl.   adv.      adv.      m.s.Acc.   1s.pr.

**諸大姐！於此(類戒)是清淨的，所以默然。我如此認定這件事。**

The ladies are pure herein; that is why they are silent. So do I record it.

~Nidānam niṭhitam.~

## Pārājikuddeso 驅擯戒

Tatrame      atṭha      pārājikā      dhammā      uddesam̄      āgacchanti.  
 這裡 這      八      驅擯      規則      誦      來  
 tatra + ime      atṭha      parājika      dhamma      udesa < ud-disati      āgacchati  
 adv. m.p.Nom.                        m.p.Nom.                        m.p.Nom.                        m.s.Acc.                        3p.pr.

**在這裡，到了誦出這八驅擯戒。**

Here the Eight Rules of Defeat come up for recitation.

### 1.Methunadhammasikkhāpadam 不淨行(=Bhikkhu Pārājiko 1)

1. Yā pana bhikkhunī chandaso methunaṁ      dhammam̄      paṭiseveyya      antamaso  
 任何      比丘尼      欲      交媾      行為      從事      乃至  
 ya      pana      bhikkhunī      chanda      methuna      dhamma      paṭiseveti      antamaso  
 f.s.Nom.   adv.      f.s.Nom.      m.s.Abl.      m.s.Acc.      m.s.Acc.      3s.opt.      adv.

## 一、若比丘尼，由於欲望，從事不淨行<sup>1</sup>，

tiracchānagatenapi, pārājikā hoti asamvāsā.  
 雌性動物 也 驅擯 是 不 共住  
 tiracchāna+gata api pārājika < hū a+samvāsa  
 m. f.s.Ins. adv. adj.(f.s.Nom.) 3s.pr. adj.(f.s.Nom.)

即使與雄性動物，犯驅擯、不共住<sup>2</sup>。

1. Should any bhikkhunī willingly engage in sexual intercourse, even with a male animal, she is defeated and no longer in affiliation.

## 2. Adinnādānasikkhāpadam 偷盜(超過五個摩沙迦) (=Bhikkhu Pārājiko 2)

2. Yā pana bhikkhunī gāmā vā araññā vā adinnām theyyasañkhātam ādiyeyya,  
 任何 比丘尼 村莊 或 森林 或 不 紿予 偷盜 意思 取  
 ya pana bhikkhunī gāma vā arañña vā <a+dadati theyya+<sañkhāyatī ādiyati  
 f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom. m.s.Abl. conj. m.s.Abl. conj. m.s.Acc. n. pp.(m.s.Acc.) 3s.opt.

## 二、若比丘尼以偷盜的意圖，從村落<sup>3</sup>或阿蘭若<sup>1</sup>拿了未被給予的東西，

<sup>1</sup> Pārā.III,24.(CS:Pārā.pg.28)：「不淨行(淫欲法)：任何非正法、村民法、賤民法、猥褻的、(淫)水的、秘密、雙雙達到三摩訶地(性高潮)，這是淫欲法。」

<sup>2</sup> Pāci.IV,214 (CS:pg.277)：「(波羅夷)：如斷頭之男人，以他的身軀不能活命。如是，比丘尼有染心，接受有染心男子由鎖骨以下、膝蓋以上，撫摸、或碰觸、或捉、或捺、或抱，非沙門女、非釋迦女。這樣稱為‘驅擯’。  
 「不共住：共住是同一羯摩，同一說戒，同學，這樣稱為‘共住’。她不跟她在一起，這樣稱為‘不共住’。」

■兩人俱有染心，由鎖骨以下、膝蓋以上，身與身相摩者，驅擯。以身摩身上物者，犯偷蘭遮。以著身之物摩身者，犯偷蘭遮。以著身之物摩著身之物者，犯突吉羅。以離手之物摩身者，犯突吉羅。以離手之物摩離手之物，犯突吉羅。

■(兩人俱有染心，)由鎖骨以上、膝蓋以下：身與身相摩者，犯偷蘭遮。以身摩身上物者，犯突吉羅。以著身之物摩身者，犯突吉羅。以著身之物摩著身之物者，犯突吉羅。以離手之物摩身者，犯突吉羅。以離手之物摩離手之物，犯突吉羅。

■一人有染心，由鎖骨以下、膝蓋以上，身與身相摩者，犯偷蘭遮。以身摩身上物者，犯突吉羅。以著身之物摩身者，犯突吉羅。以著身之物摩著身之物者，犯突吉羅。以離手之物摩身者，犯突吉羅。以離手之物摩離手之物，犯突吉羅。

■(一人有染心，)由鎖骨以上、膝蓋以下：身與身相摩者，犯突吉羅。以身摩身上物者，犯突吉羅。以著身之物摩身者，犯突吉羅。以著身之物摩著身之物者，犯突吉羅。以離手之物摩身者，犯突吉羅。以離手之物摩離手之物，犯突吉羅。

■兩人俱有染心，夜叉、或餓鬼、或黃門、或具有人形之畜生，由鎖骨以下、膝蓋以上，身與身相摩者，犯偷蘭遮。以身摩身上物者，犯突吉羅。以著身之物摩身者，犯突吉羅。以著身之物摩著身之物者，犯突吉羅。以離手之物摩身者，犯突吉羅。以離手之物摩離手之物，犯突吉羅。

■(兩人俱有染心，夜叉、或餓鬼、或黃門、或具有人形之畜生，)由鎖骨以上、膝蓋以下：身與身相摩者，犯突吉羅。以身摩身上物者，犯突吉羅。以著身之物摩身者，犯突吉羅。以著身之物摩著身之物者，犯突吉羅。以離手之物摩身者，犯突吉羅。以離手之物摩離手之物，犯突吉羅。

■一人有染心，(夜叉、或餓鬼、或黃門、或具有人形之畜生，)由鎖骨以下、膝蓋以上，身與身相摩者，犯突吉羅。以身摩身上物者，犯突吉羅。以著身之物摩身者，犯突吉羅。以著身之物摩著身之物者，犯突吉羅。以離手之物摩身者，犯突吉羅。以離手之物摩離手之物，犯突吉羅。

■(一人有染心，夜叉、或餓鬼、或黃門、或具有人形之畜生，)由鎖骨以上、膝蓋以下：身與身相摩者，犯突吉羅。以身摩身上物者，犯突吉羅。以著身之物摩身者，犯突吉羅。以著身之物摩著身之物者，犯突吉羅。以離手之物摩身者，犯突吉羅。以離手之物摩離手之物，犯突吉羅。

<sup>3</sup> Pārā.III,46(CS:pg.56)：「村落：有一屋村落，有二屋村落，有三屋村落，有四屋村落，有人村落，有無人村落，有圍牆村落，無圍牆村落，有牛舍等的村落，有商隊住四個月以上的村落，以上稱為村落。」

## 2. Should any bhikkhunī, in what is reckoned a theft, take what is not given from an inhabited area or from the wilderness

yathārūpe adinnādāne rājāno coram gahetvā haneyyum vā bandheyyum vā  
 如彼 這樣 不給予 (偷)拿 王 盜賊 抓 殺 或 監禁 或  
 yathārūpa <a-dadati+ādāna rājan cora gaṇhati hanati vā bandhati vā  
 adj.(n.s.Loc.) pp. n.s.Loc. m.p.Nom. m.s.Acc. ger. 3p.opt. conj. 3p.opt. conj.

如同偷拿了這樣的未被給的東西時，國王們抓到盜賊後，或處死<sup>2</sup>、或囚禁、  
 just as when, in the taking of what is not given, kings arresting the criminal would  
 flog, imprison,

pabbājeyyum vā, corāsi bālāsi mūlhāsi thenāsīti,  
 驅逐 或 盜賊 是 笨蛋 是 愚痴 是 小偷 是 (弓號)  
 pabbājeti vā corī+ asi bālā +asi mūlha+asi thenī+ asi+ iti  
 3p.opt. conj. f.s.Nom.(2s.pr.) f.s.Nom.(2s.pr.) pp.(f.s.Nom.)(2s.pr.) f.s.Nom. (2s.pr.) ind.

或放逐<sup>3</sup>，說：「妳是盜賊、笨蛋、痴人、小偷。」

or banish her, saying, "You are a robber, you are a fool, you are benighted, you are a thief"

tathārūpam bhikkhunī adinnam ādiyamānā; ayam'pi pārājikā hoti asamvāsā.  
 如此 這樣 比丘尼 不 紿予 取 這 也 驅擯 是 不 共住  
 tathārūpa bhikkhunī a+dadati ādiyati ayam api pārājika < hū a+samvāsa  
 adj.(m.s.Acc.) f.s.Nom. pp.(m.s.Acc.) f.s.Nom. ind. adj.(f.s.Nom.) 3s.pr. adj.(f.s.Nom.)

像那樣，比丘尼偷了未被給予的東西<sup>4</sup>，這也犯驅擯，不共住。<sup>5</sup>

a bhikkhunī in the same way taking what is not given is defeated and no longer in affiliation.

## 3. Manussaviggahasikkhāpadam 奪取人命(=Bhikkhu Pārājiko 3)

3. Yā pana bhikkhunī sañcicca manussaviggaham jīvitā voropeyya,  
 任何 比丘尼 故意 人 體 生命 奪取  
 ya pana bhikkhunī <sañcinteti namussa + viggaha jīvita voropeti  
 f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom. ger. (adv.) m. m.s.Acc. m.s.Abl. 3s.opt.

三、若比丘尼故意<sup>1</sup>奪取人的生命<sup>2</sup>，

「村落近郊：有圍牆之村落，人站在村門中，丟石頭所落之處：於無圍牆之住家，人站在住家門中，丟石頭所落之處。」

<sup>1</sup> Pārā.III,46(CS:pg.57)：「阿蘭若：村落及村落近郊之外，稱為阿蘭若。」《分別論》(Vibh.p.251.)：「於帝柱之外，一切都為阿練若。」Samantapāsādikā(一切歡喜, Sp.p.301.)：「至少要有五百弓(一弓約四肘長)的距離才名阿練若。」

<sup>2</sup> Pārā.III,46(CS:pg.57)：「或處死：或以手、或以足、或以鞭、或以棒、或以半杖、或斷肢刑而殺死。」

<sup>3</sup> Pārā.III,46(CS:pg.57)：「放逐：放逐於村外、或鄉外、或城外、或省外、或國外。」

<sup>4</sup> Pārā.III,46(CS:pg.57)：「不給予：凡是不給予，非捨棄物，非永遠捨棄物，被守護之物，被人珍愛，他人所有物，此稱為「不給予」。」「取：奪、取去、盜、搞壞原位(威儀路)、脫離本處、等候於某特定的地方(而取)。」

<sup>5</sup> Pārā.III,55(CS:pg.69)：「不犯(偷)之想：親厚想、暫借、鬼物、畜生擁有物、垃圾想；癡狂想、心亂者、惱痛者、最初之犯行者。」

### 3. Should any bhikkhunī intentionally deprive a human being of life,

satthahārakam vāssa pariyeseyya, marañavannam vā sārvanneyya, marañaya vā samādapeyya,  
 武器 攜帶 或 它 遍求 死亡 美好 或 盛讚 死亡 或 煽動  
 sattha+hāraka vā+assa pariyesati marana+vanna vā satm-vanñeti marana vā samādapeti  
 n. m.s.Acc. conj. m.s.Dat. 3s.opt. n. m.s.Acc. conj. 3s.opt. m.s.Dat. conj. 3s.opt.

或是為她尋找攜帶武器的人，或是盛讚死亡的美好，或是煽動自殺，說：

or search for an assassin for him, or praise the advantages of death, or incite him to die, saying,

“Ambho purisa kiṁ tuyh’iminā pāpakena dujjīvitena, matam te jīvitā seyyo”ti,  
 嘿！你 人 什麼 你 這 可憐 苦 生命 死 她們(=妳) 活 更好 (引號)  
 ambho purisa ka tvarñ ayanñ pāpaka du + jīvita marati tvarñ jīvita seyya iti  
 ind. m.s.Voc. m.s.Nom. s.Dat. m.s.Ins. m.s.Ins. m.s.Ins. pp.(m.s.Nom.) p.Nom. m.s.Abl. m.s.Nom. ind.

「嘿！人呀！這個悲苦的生命對你有什麼(用)呢？對於你，死比活著更好。」

“My good man, what use is this evil, miserable life to you? Death would be better for you than life,”

iti cittamanā cittasaṅkappā anekapariyāyena marañavannam vā samāvanneyya,  
 如此 心 意 心 思惟 種種的 方法 死亡 美好 或 盛讚  
 iti citta+manas citta+saṅkappa aneka + pariyāya marañaya + vanñna vā samāvanñeti  
 ind. n. f.s.Nom. n. f.s.Nom. adj. m.s.Ins. n. m.s.Acc. conj. 3s.opt.

有這樣的心意和心思<sup>3</sup>，用各種方法盛讚死亡的美好，

or with such an idea in mind, such a purpose in mind, should in various ways praise the advantages of death,

marañaya vā samādapeyya; ayam’pi pārājikā hoti asamvāsā.  
 死亡 或 煽動 這 也 驅擯 是 不 共住  
 marañaya vā samādapeti ayam’pi pārājika < hū a + samvāsa  
 n.s.Dat. conj. 3s.opt. f.s.Nom. ind. adj.(f.s.Nom.) 3s.pr. adj.(f.s.Nom.)

<sup>1</sup> Pārā.III,73(CS:pg.92)：「故意：由知、由認識、確知而存心違犯。」Pāci.IV,215(CS:pg.279)：「不犯者：非故意者、失念者、無知者、不受(樂)者、癡狂者、心亂者、痛惱者、(佛世)最初犯行者。」

<sup>2</sup> Pārā.III,73(CS:pg.92)：「人體：凡是第一心已被生在母的子宮者，第一識已出現；直至死時，於其中間，這稱為‘人體’。」

<sup>3</sup> 「行動」(vāyamati 努力)而符合殺罪，列舉以下數項：

- (1) 自手殺生，或對方因此墮死，或隔一段時間才死。
- (2) 唆教人去殺生，而自己在旁觀。
- (3) 邀使人殺生。邀使人去殺某人，或被遣者輾轉邀他人去殺。
- (4) 懸賞殺人，或唆使人懸賞殺人。
- (5) 自己勸人(眾生)去死，或教別人去勸人(眾生)去死，或寫書、撰文勸死。
- (6) 給人(眾生)毒藥或殺具，此人(眾生)因此自盡；或下毒在眼、耳、鼻、身上、瘡中；或給墮胎藥；或以咒術殺生('明(咒)'所作 vijjamaya)；或以神變所作(殺)(iddhimaya)。  
 若是給糖、蜜等，而想：「吃這個當死。」則犯突吉羅；若產生痛苦，則犯偷蘭遮；若致死，則犯波羅夷。

或是煽動自殺，這也犯驅擯、不共住。<sup>1</sup>

or incite him to die, she also is defeated and no longer in affiliation.

#### 4.Uttarimanussadhammasikkhāpadam(妄稱得)上人法(=Bhikkhu Pārājiko 4)

4. Yā pana bhikkhunī anabhijānaṁ uttarimanussadhammāṁ  
 任何 比丘尼 沒有 證知 超越 人 法  
 ya pana bhikkhunī an+abhijānāti uttari+manussa+dhamma  
 f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom. pp.(m.s.Acc.) adv. m. m.s.Acc.

四、若比丘尼沒有證知而聲稱自己有超越凡人的法<sup>2</sup>、

4. Should any bhikkhunī, without direct knowledge, boast of a superior human state,

attūpanāyikāṁ alamariyañānadassanāṁ samudācareyya: “Iti jānāmi, iti passāmī”ti,  
 自己有 適合 神聖 知識 洞見 聲稱 如此 知道 如此 看見 (弓號)  
 <attan+upa-neti alam+ariya+ñāna+dassana sam+ud-ā-carati iti jānāti iti passāmi + iti  
 n.s.Acc. n.s.Acc. 3s.opt. ind. 1s.pr. ind. 1s.pr. ind.

足堪聖者的知識和洞見，說：「我知道這樣，我見到這樣。」

a truly noble knowledge and vision as present in herself, saying, “Thus do I know;  
 thus do I see,”

tato aparena samayena samanuggāhiyamānā vā asamanuggāhiyamānā vā  
 從此 接著 時候 究明 或 不 究明 或  
 ta apara samaya sarṇ+anu-gāhati vā a+saṁ-anu-gāhati vā  
 m.s.Abl. m.s.Ins. m.s.Ins. ppr.(f.s.Nom.) conj. ppr.(f.s.Nom.) conj.

從此以後，不管被詢問或未被詢問，

such that regardless of whether or not she is cross-examined on a later occasion,

āpannā visuddhāpekkhā evaṁ vadeyya, “ājānamevaṁ, ayye, avacām, ‘jānāmi’  
 犯戒 清淨 期望 如此 說 不知道 如此 大姐 說 知道  
 <pp. of āpajjati visujjhati+apekkhati evaṁ vadeti a+jānanta<ppr. of jānāti+evaṁ a+vacati jānāti  
 f.s.Nom. f.s.Nom. adv. 3s.opt. s.Nom. adv. f.p.Voc. 1s.aor. 1s.pr.

希望淨化曾犯的人<sup>3</sup>，她這樣說：「大姐！我不知道而如此地說我知道、

she — being remorseful and desirous of purification — might say, “Ladies, not  
 knowing, I said I know;

apassām, ‘passāmī’. Tucchaṁ musā vilapin” ti, aññatra adhimānā,

<sup>1</sup> Pārā.III,78(CS:pg.99)：「不犯：無意圖、無知、無意圖致死者、癡狂者，最初之犯行者。」

<sup>2</sup> Pārā.III,91(CS:pg.117)：「超越凡人的法(上人法)：禪那(初禪乃至第四禪)、解脫(空、無相、無願)、三昧(空、無相、無願)、正受(三摩鉢地，空、無相、無願)、智見(三明)、修道(指四聖諦等三十七菩提分)、證果(證初果乃至四果)、斷染(斷染瞋恚)、心離蓋(離染瞋恚)、心樂空屋(樂在初禪乃至第四禪)。」

<sup>3</sup> 希望淨化：希望成為女居士，希望成為優婆夷，希望成為女淨人，希望成為沙彌尼。(cf. Pāci.IV,92 ; CS:pg.118)

不 見到	看見	虛偽	虛妄	妄說	除了	增上慢
a+passanta<ppr. of passati	passati	tuccha	musā	vilapim + iti	aññatra	adhi-māna

s.Nom. 1s.pr. adj.(s.Acc.) s.Acc. adv. m.s.Abl.

沒見到而說我見到，我虛偽地妄說。」除了高估自己外，

not seeing, I said I see — vainly, falsely, idly,” unless it was from over-estimation, she also is defeated and no longer in affiliation.

ayam'pi	pārājikā	hoti	asamvāsā.
這	也	驅擯	是

ayam' api pārājika < hū a+saṁvāsa  
f.s.Nom. ind. adj.(f.s.Nom.) 3s.pr. adj.(f.s.Nom.)

這也犯驅擯、不共住。<sup>1</sup>

she also is defeated and no longer in affiliation.

## \*5.Ubbhajānumaṇḍalikāsikkhāpadam(鎖骨以下、)膝蓋以上(撫摸等)

5. Yā pana bhikkhunī	avassutā	avassutassa	purisapuggalassa,
任何	比丘尼	充滿欲望	男人 補伽羅

ya pana bhikkhunī avassuta avasuta purisa + puggala  
f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom. adj.(m.s.) pp.( m.s.Gen.) m. m.s.Gen.

五、若比丘尼，有染心<sup>2</sup>，接受有染心男子<sup>3</sup>，

5. Should any bhikkhunī, lusting, consent to a lustful man's

adhakkakam ubbhajānumaṇḍalam āmasanam vā parāmasanam vā gahaṇam vā chupanam vā
以下 鎖骨 以上 膝 一個圓周的 觸摸 或 抓持、碰觸 或 拿、抓 或 捋 或

adha-akkaka ubbha + jānu+maṇḍalikā āmasana parāmasana gahaṇa chupana  
n.s.Gen. ind. n. adj.(n.s.Acc.) n.s.Acc. n.s.Acc. n.s.Acc. n.s.Acc.

由鎖骨以下、膝蓋以上，撫摸、或碰觸、或捉、或捺、

rubbing, rubbing up against, taking hold of, touching, or fondling (her) below the collar-bone and above the circle of the knees,

paṭipīlanam vā sādiyeyya, ayampi pārājikā hoti asamvāsā ubbhajānumaṇḍalikā.
抱、壓迫 或 接受 這 也 驅擯 是 共住 以上 膝蓋 一個圓周的

patipīlana sādiyati<(sad 坐+i+ya) ayam' api pārājika a+saṁvāsa ubbha + jānu + maṇḍalikā  
n.s.Acc. 3s.opt. f.s.Nom. adj.(f.s.Nom.) 3s.pr. adj.(f.s.Nom.) ind. n. adj.(n.s.Acc.)

<sup>1</sup> Pārā.III,100(CS:pg.138)：「不犯：增上慢、無意圖的說溜嘴者、癡狂者、心亂者、痛惱者、最初之犯行者。」

<sup>2</sup> Pāci.IV,214 (CS:pg.276)：「充滿欲望的：有依戀，有欲望，被愛所綁的。」

<sup>3</sup> Pāci.IV,214 (CS:pg.276)：「男補伽羅：男人，非男夜叉、非男鬼、非雄性畜生；是有智的、適當的身體的接觸與從事。」

或抱<sup>1</sup>者，這也犯驅擯、不共住，膝蓋以上(之罪的原因。<sup>2</sup>

she also is defeated and no longer in affiliation for being “one above the circle of the knees.”

## 6.Vajjappaṭicchādikāsikkhāpadam 覆藏罪(不告大眾某比丘尼犯驅擯) (=Bhikkhu P 64)

6.Yā pana bhikkhunī jānam pārājikam dhammarājājjhāpannām bhikkhunim nevattanā paṭicodeyya,  
任何 比丘尼 明知 驅擯 法 犯罪過 比丘尼 (卻)沒被自己 責備  
ya pana bhikkhunī jāna pārājika dhamma ajjhāpanna bhikkhunī na+eva+attanā paṭicodeeti  
f.s.Nom.adv. f.s.Nom. m.s.Acc. adj.(m.s.Acc.) m.s.Acc. pp.(f.s.Acc.) f.s.Acc. m.s.Ins. 3s.opt.

六、若比丘尼，明知那位比丘尼犯驅擯法而不責備其罪<sup>3</sup>，

6. Should any bhikkhunī, knowing that (another) bhikkhunī has fallen into an act (entailing) defeat, neither accuse her herself

na gaṇassa āroceyya, yadā ca sā tħitā vā assa cutā vā nāsitā vā avassatā vā,  
不 羣 告知 其後 她 住 或 有 滅 或 驅逐 或 入外道 或  
na gaṇa āroceti yadā ca ta tħitā assa cutā nāsitā avassatā  
m.s.Nom. 3s.opt. adv. f.s.Nom. pp.( f.s.Nom.) 3s.opt. pp.( f.s.Nom.) pp.( f.s.Nom.) f.s.Nom.

不告大眾，其後，該尼或活著、或死亡、或被驅逐、或入外道時<sup>4</sup>，

nor inform the group, and then — whether she (the other bhikkhunī) is still alive or has died, has been expelled or gone over to another sect —

sā pacchā evam vadeyya “pubbevāham, ayye, aññāsim etam bhikkhunim  
她 之後 如是 說 先前 我 大姐 知 彼 比丘尼  
sā pacchā evam vadeyya “pubbe+ahaṁ aññāsim etam bhikkhunī  
f.s.Nom. adv. adv. 3s.opt. adv. 1s.Nom. f.s.Voc. 3s.aor. f.s.Acc. f.s.Acc.

她這樣說：「大姐！我先前已知那比丘尼

she (this bhikkhunī) should say, “Even before, ladies, I knew of this bhikkhunī that

‘evarūpā ca evarūpā ca sā bhaginī’ti, no ca kho attanā paṭicodessarām, na gaṇassa ārocessan”ti,  
如是 和 如是 和 那 姐妹 不 和 自己 責備 不 大眾 告知  
evarūpa evarūpa ta bhaginī atta paṭicodeti gana āroceti  
n.s.Acc. n.s.Acc. f.s.Nom. f.s.Nom. m.s.Ins. 3s.opt. m.s.Nom. 3s.opt.

如此這般，乃因是姐妹(的關係)，故自己不欲責其罪，不告眾。」

<sup>1</sup> Pāci.IV,214 (CS:pg.277)：「接受擁抱：接受抓住肢體擠壓。」

<sup>2</sup> 《四分比丘尼戒本》(T22.1031.3)作：「從腋已下、膝已上身相觸，若捉摩、若牽、若推、若上摩、若下摩、若舉、若下、若捉、若捺，是比丘尼波羅夷、不共住，是身相觸也。」

Pāci.IV,215(CS:pg.279)：「不犯：無意圖、無知、無接受(樂)者、癡狂者、心亂者、痛惱者、最初之犯行者。」

<sup>3</sup> 不責備其罪：《四分比丘尼戒本》(T22.1031.3)作：「不自發露」。

<sup>4</sup> Pāci.IV,217 (CS:pg.281)：「住：住世的徵兆。死：已死。被驅逐：自己已背教者，或入他教。入外道：移入外道。」

‘This sister is of such-and-such a sort,’ and I didn’t accuse her myself nor did I inform the group,”

ayampi	pārājikā	hoti	asamvāsā	vajjappaṭicchādikā.
這 也	驅擯	是	不 共住	罪 覆藏
ayarñ api	pārājika	< hū	a+sañvāsa	vajja +< paṭicchādeti (paṭi+chad 蓋)
f.s.Nom. ind.	adj.(f.s.Nom.)	3s.pr.	adj.(f.s.Nom.)	n. adj.(f.s.Nom.)

這也犯驅擯、不共住，覆藏罪(的原因)。<sup>1</sup>

then she also is defeated and no longer in affiliation for being “one who concealed a fault.”

## \*7.Ukkhittānuvattikāsikkhāpadam 追隨被罷黜(之比丘)

7. Yā pana bhikkhunī samaggena sañghena ukkhittam bhikkhum dhammena vinayena
任何 比丘尼 和合 僧伽 中止、罷黜 比丘 法 律
ya pana bhikkhunī samagga sañgha ukhitta bhikkhu dhamma vinaya
f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom. m.s.Ins. m.s.Ins. pp.(m.s.Acc.) m.s.Acc. m.s.Ins. m.s.Ins.

七、若比丘尼，追隨被和合僧依法、依律、

7. Should any bhikkhunī follow a bhikkhu who has been suspended by a united Community (of bhikkhus) in line with the Dhamma, in line with the Vinaya,

satthusāsanena anādarām appatikāram akatasahāyām tamanuvatteyya,
(大)師 教法 不敬 未 納受 不做 盟友 這 追隨
satthu+sāsana anādara a + paṭikāra akata+sahāya tam+anuvatteti
m. m.s.Ins. m.s.Acc. adj.(m.s.Acc.) pp. m.s.Acc. 3s.opt.

依師教罷黜<sup>2</sup>之不恭敬<sup>3</sup>、未納受<sup>4</sup>、不作盟友<sup>5</sup>之比丘者，

in line with the teacher’s instructions, and who is disrespectful, has not made amends, has broken off his friendship (with the bhikkhus), the bhikkhunīs are to admonish her thus:

sā bhikkhunī bhikkhunīhi evamassa vacanīyā “eso kho, ayye, bhikkhu samaggena sañghena ukhitto,
那 比丘尼 比丘尼 如是 說 這 大姐 比丘 和合 僧伽 中止、罷黜
ya bhikkhunī bhikkhunī evañ + atthi vacanīyā eta bhikkhu samagga sañgha ukhitta
f.s.Nom.f.s.Nom. f.p.Acc. adv. 3s.opt. grd.(f.s.Nom.)m.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Voc. m.s.Nom. m.s.Ins. m.s.Ins. pp.(m.s.Nom.)

該比丘尼當由諸比丘尼這樣說：「大姐！這比丘被和合僧依法、依律、

“Lady, that bhikkhu has been suspended by a united Community in line with the

<sup>1</sup> Pārā.III,100(CS:pg.138)：「不犯：增上慢、無意圖妄語者、癡狂者、心亂者、痛惱者、最初之犯行者。」  
《四分比丘尼戒本》(T22.1035.3)：「若比丘尼知比丘尼有罷罪，覆藏者，波逸提。」

<sup>2</sup> Pāci.IV,232(CS:pg.298)：「罷黜(擯)：由於不認罪、或不懺悔、或不捨惡見，而被罷黜。」

<sup>3</sup> Pāci.IV,218(CS:pg.282)：「不恭敬：輕視僧伽、別眾、人、羯摩。」

<sup>4</sup> Pāci.IV,218(CS:pg.282)：「未納受：被罷黜者未復權。」

<sup>5</sup> Pāci.IV,219(CS:Pāci.pg.282)：「不作盟友：同一個宗教團體的比丘稱為盟友；他與他不同，因此稱為不作盟友。」

## Dhamma, in line with the Vinaya,

dhammena vinayena satthusāsanena anādarō appaṭikārō akatasahāyo, māyye, etarā bhikkhūnā anuvattīti.  
 法 律 (大)師 教法 不敬 未 納受 不做 盟友 勿 大姐 這 比丘 隨順  
 dhamma vinaya satthu+sāsana anādara a+paṭikāra akata+sahāya ma+ayye eta bhikkhu anuvatti+ti

依師教罷黜之不恭敬、未納受、不作盟友者。大姐！勿追隨這比丘。」

in line with the teacher's instructions. He is disrespectful, he has not made amends, he has broken off his friendship. Do not follow him, lady."

Evañca	sā	bhikkhunī	bhikkhunīhi	vuccamānā	tath'eva	pagganheyya,
如此 和	這	比丘尼	比丘尼	勸告	如此 仍	努力
evam +ca	ta	bhikkhunī	bhikkhunī	vuccati	tathā + eva	pa+ganhāti
adv.conj.	f.s.Nom.	f.s.Nom.	f.p.Ins.	ppr.(f.s.Nom.)	adv.	3s.opt.

該比丘尼被諸比丘尼這樣勸告時，仍然那樣堅持，

And should that bhikkhunī, thus admonished by the bhikkhunīs, persist as before,

sā	bhikkhunī	bhikkhunīhi	yāvatatiyām	samanubhāsitabbā	tassa	paṭinissaggāya.
這	比丘尼	比丘尼	直到	第三	勸告	它 放棄
ta	bhikkhunī	bhikkhunī	yāva + tatiyām	samanubhāsatī	ta	paṭinissajjati
f.s.Nom.	f.s.Nom.	f.p.Ins.	adv.	grd.(f.s.Nom.)	m.s.Gen.	m.s.Dat.

諸比丘尼應該乃至三次勸告該比丘尼放棄它。

the bhikkhunīs are to rebuke her up to three times so as to desist.

Yāvatatiyāñ'ce	samanubhāsiyamānā	tañ paṭinissajjeyya,	icc'etam kusalam.
直到 第三 如果	勸告	它 放棄	如是 那 善
yāva+tatiyām + ce	samanubhāsatī	ta paṭinissajjati	iti+ eta kusala
adv. conj.	ppr.(f.s.Nom.)	m.s.Acc.	3s.opt.

如果到了第三次被勸告時，(她)放棄它，那就好。如果不放棄，

If while being rebuked up to three times she desists, that is good. If she does not desist,

No ce	paṭinissajjeyya,	ayampi	pārājikā	hoti	asamīvāsa	ukkhittānuvattikā.
不 如果	放棄	這 也	驅擯	是	不 共住	中止、罷黜 隨順
no ce	paṭinissajjati	ayam̄ api	pārājika	< hū	a+saṁvāsa	ukkhitta+anuvattikā
adv. conj.	3s.opt.	f.s.Nom. ind.	f.s.Nom.	3s.pr.	adj.(f.s.Nom.)	pp. adj.(f.s.Nom.)

這也犯驅擯、不共住，追隨被罷黜(之比丘的原因)。<sup>1</sup>

then she also is defeated and no longer in affiliation for being "a follower of a suspended (bhikkhu)."'

<sup>1</sup> Pāci.IV,220(CS:pg.284)：「不犯：非同學者、放棄者、癡狂者、心亂者、痛惱者、最初之犯行者。」

## \*8. Aṭṭhavatthukāsikkhāpadam 八事驅擯

8. Yā pana bhikkhunī avassutā avassutassa purisapuggalassa hatthaggahanām vā sādiyeyya,  
 任何 比丘尼 充滿欲望 充滿欲望的 男人 補伽羅 手 捉 或 接受  
 ya pana bhikkhunī avassuta avasuta purisa + puggala hattha + gahaṇa sādiyatī<sup>1</sup>  
 f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom. adj.(m.s.) pp.( m.s.Gen.) m. m.s.Gen. m. n.s.Acc. 3s.opt.

八、若比丘尼，有染心，<sup>(1)</sup>接受有染心男子的手

8. Should any bhikkhunī, lusting, consent to a lustful man's taking hold of her hand

saṅghāti kaṇṇaggahanām vā sādiyeyya, santiṭheyya vā, sallapeyya vā, saṅketām vā gaccheyya,  
 僧伽梨(大衣)邊緣 捉 或 接受 站著 或 交談 或 約定的地方 或 去  
 saṅghāti+kaṇṇa+gahaṇa sādiyati santiṭhati sallapati saṅketa gacchati  
 m. n. n.s.Acc. 3s.opt. 3s.opt. 3s.opt. n.s.Acc. 3s.opt.

<sup>(2)</sup>或接受捉僧團梨衣角，<sup>(3)</sup>或站著、<sup>(4)</sup>或交談、<sup>(5)</sup>或到約定的地點、

or touching the edge of her outer robe, or should she stand with him or converse with him or go to a rendezvous with him,

purisassa vā abbhāgamanām sādiyeyya, channām vā anupaviseyya,  
 男人 或 抵達 接受 蓋、遮 或 進入  
 purisa abbhāgamaṇa sādiyati channa anupavisati< (anu 隨+pa+vis 進入)  
 m.s.Acc. n.s.Acc. 3s.opt. pp.(m.s.Acc.) 3s.opt.

<sup>(6)</sup>或接受男子的抵達，<sup>(7)</sup>進入遮掩處，

or should she consent to his approaching her, or should she enter a hidden place with him,

kāyām vā tadaṭṭhāya upasamhareyya etassa asaddhammassa paṭisevanatthāya,  
 身體 或 對那場合 相靠近 這 非 正法 跟隨 情況  
 kāya ta+d+attha upasāñharati eta a + saddhamma paṭisevana+attha  
 n.s.Acc. f.s.Ins. 3s.opt. m.s.Gen. m.s.Gen. n. m.s.Gen.

<sup>(8)</sup>或身體倚靠，這種跟隨非正法的情況，<sup>1</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Pāci.IV,221(CS:pg.286) : (1)接受(有染心男子的)手：手，指從手肘到指端抓取。抓取鎖骨以上，膝蓋以下(的肌膚)行其非法(=染法)而享受者，犯偷蘭遮。

(2)接受捉僧伽梨衣角：接受捉取已穿著、已裹住(的僧伽梨)，行其非法而享受者，犯偷蘭遮。

(3)站著：靠近男子一臂之距內，行其非法而享受者，犯偷蘭遮。

(4)交談：靠近男子一臂之距內站著交談，行其非法而享受者，犯偷蘭遮。

(5)到約定的地點：與男子行其非法而享受--“來到諸女的空間”就是‘去’，步步犯惡作(突吉羅)。靠近男人一臂之距內，犯偷蘭遮。

(6)接受男子的抵達：接受男子的抵達，行其非法而享受者，犯惡作。靠近(男人)一臂之距內，犯偷蘭遮。

(7)進入遮掩處：(與男人)進入遮掩處，行其非法而享受者，犯偷蘭遮。

or should she dispose her body to him — (any of these) for the purpose of that unrighteous act (Comm: physical contact) —

ayampi	pārājikā	hoti	asamvāsā	aṭṭhavatthukā.
她	也	驅擯	是	不 共住 八 事
ayarī api	pārājika	< hū	a+sarīvāsa	aṭṭha + vatthuka
m.s.Nom. ind.	f.s.Nom.	3s.pr.	adj.(f.s.Nom.)	adj.(f.s.Nom.)

她也犯驅擯、不共住，犯八事(的原因)。<sup>1</sup>

then she also is defeated and no longer in affiliation for “(any of) eight grounds.”

Udditthā	kho,	ayyāyo,	aṭṭha	pārājikā	dhammā.
誦		諸大姐	八	驅擯	規則
< pp. of uddisati	kho			pārājika	dhamma
m.p.Nom.	adv.	f.p.Voc.	m.p.Nom.	m.p.Nom.	m.p.Nom.

諸大姐！八驅擯的規則已經誦完了。

The ladies, the Eight Rules of Defeat have been recited,

Yesam bhikkhunī aññataram vā aññataram vā āpajjivā na labhati bhikkhunīhi saddhim
任何 比丘尼 隨一 犯 不 得到 比丘尼 一起
ya bhikkhunī aññatara vā aññatara vā āpajjati na labhati bhikkhunī saddhim
f.p.Gen. f.s.Nom. adj. adj.(m.s.Acc.) ger. adv. 3s.pr. f.p.Ins. adv.

比丘尼犯了其中的任何一條，就不能跟諸比丘尼住在一起，

in any one which if a bhikkhunī admits to be at fault she is no longer entitled to (live in) communion with bhikkhunīs ;

sañvāsam, yathā pure tathā pacchā, pārājikā hoti asamvāsā.
共住 如同 前 如同 後 驅擯 是 不 共住
sañvāsatī yathā pura tathā pacchā pārājika < hū a+ sarīvāsa
m.s.Acc. adv. m.s.Loc. adv. adv. f.s.Nom. 3s.pr. adj.(f.s.Nom.)

以後就像是從前(未成為比丘尼)那樣，犯驅擯、不共住(的原因)。

as (she was) before (the admission) so (she is) after (the confession of the fault); she is defeated and no more in communion.

Tatth'āyyayo, pucchāmi: Kacci'ttha parisuddhā?
這裡 諸大姐 我問 是否 於此 清淨
tattha pucchati kacci ettha pp. of parisujjhati

(8)身體倚靠：身體倚靠男人在一臂之距內站著，行其非法而享受者，犯偷蘭遮。

《四分律》卷第二十二：「於七事中。若不發露懺悔罪未除。若犯第八事波羅夷。」(T22.716.2)

<sup>1</sup> 《四分比丘尼戒本》(T22.1031.3)：「若比丘尼染污心，知男子染污心受，捉手、捉衣、入屏處、共立、共語、共行、或身相倚、或共期，是比丘尼波羅夷、不共住，犯此八事故。」

adv. f.p.Acc. 1s.pr. ind. adv. m.p.Nom.

在這裡我問諸大姐：「妳們於此(類戒)是否清淨？」

Herein I ask the ladies : Are you pure in this?

Dutiyam'pi pucchāmi: Kacci'ttha parisuddhā?  
 第二 也 間 是否 於此 清淨  
 dutiyam + api pucchatī kacci ettha pp. of parisujjhati  
 m.s.Acc. ind. 1s.pr. ind. adv. m.p.Nom.

第二次我再問：「妳們於此(類戒)是否清淨？」

For the second times I ask the ladies : Are you pure in this?

Tatiyam'pi pucchāmi: Kacci'ttha parisuddhā?  
 第三 也 間 是否 於此 清淨  
 tatiyam + api pucchatī kacci ettha pp. of parisujjhati  
 m.s.Acc. ind. 1s.pr. ind. adv. m.p.Nom.

第三次再問：「妳們於此(類戒)是否清淨？」

For the third times I ask the ladies : Are you pure in this?

Parisuddh'etth'āyyāyo, tasmā tunhī, evam etam dhārayāmi.  
 清淨 在此 大姐 因此 沈默 如此 這 認為  
 parisuddha ettha ta tunhī evam eta dharati  
 pp.(m.p.Nom.) adv. f.p.Nom. m.s.Abl. ind. adv. m.s.Acc. 1s.pr.

諸大姐！於此(類戒)是清淨的，所以默然。我如此認定這件事。

The ladies are pure herein; that is why they are silent. So do I record it.

~Pārājikam niṭṭhitam.~

## Saṅghādisesuddeso 僧殘戒

Ime kho panāyyāyo sattarasa saṅghādisesā dhammā uddesam āgacchanti.  
 這些 又 諸大姐 十七 僧殘 規則 詩 聞  
 ima kho pana saṅghādisesa dhamma uddesati āgacchati  
 m.p.Nom. adv. f.p.Voc. m.p.Nom. m.p.Nom. m.p.Nom. m.s.Acc. 3p.pr.

諸大姐！現在到了誦出這十七僧殘戒。

Now , the ladies, the Seventeen Rules entailing Initial and Subsequent Meeting of the

Saṅgha come up for recitation.

### \*1.Ussayavādikāsikkhāpadam 訴訟

1. Yā pana bhikkhunī ussayavādikā vihareyya gahapatinā vā gahapatiputta vā

任何	比丘尼	訴訟	住	居士	或	居士子	或
ya	pana	bhikkhunī	ussayavādika	viharati	gahapati	gahapati +putta	
f.s.Nom.	adv.	f.s.Nom.	adj.(f. s.Nom.)	3s.opt.	m.s.Ins.	m.	m.s.Ins.

一、若比丘尼，與居士、居士子<sup>1</sup>、

1. Should any bhikkhunī start litigation against a householder, a householder's son,

dāsenā vā kammakārena vā antamaso samaṇaparibbājakenāpi,

奴婢	或	作工者	或	乃至	沙門	遍行者
dāsa		kammakāra		adv.	m.	m.s.Ins.
m.s.Ins.		m.s.Ins.				ind.

奴婢<sup>2</sup>、傭人、乃至沙門出家者行訴訟<sup>3</sup>，

a slave, or a worker, or even against a wandering contemplative:

ayampi bhikkhunī paṭhamāpattikā dhammā āpannā nissāraṇīyam saṅghādisesam.

這也	比丘尼	第一次	違犯	法	犯罪	逐出	僧殘
ayāñ pi	bhikkhunī	paṭhama + āpattika	dhamma	āpannā	nissāraṇīya	saṅghādisesa	
f.s.Nom.	adv. f.s.Nom	m.s.Acc.	m.s.Acc.	pp.(f.s.Acc.)	grd.(f.s.Acc.)	adj.(f.s.Acc.)	

既使這比丘尼初次犯法，也是犯應被逐出的僧殘。<sup>4</sup>

this bhikkhunī, as soon as she has fallen into the first act of offence, is to be (temporarily) driven out, and it entails initial and subsequent meetings of the Community.

### \*2.Corīvuṭṭhāpikāsikkhāpadam(接受)賊女受戒

2.Yā pana bhikkhunī jānam corim vajjhām viditam anapaloketvā rājānam vā

任何	比丘尼	知	賊女	處罰	已知道	未	請求	王
ya	pana	bhikkhunī	jāna	corim	vajjha	vidita	an + apaloketi	rājā
f.s.Nom.	adv.	f.s.Nom	m.s.Acc.	f.s.Acc.	adj.(f. s.Acc.)	pp.(f. s.Acc.)	ger.	m.s.Acc.

二、若比丘尼明知<sup>1</sup>已被處分的賊女<sup>2</sup>，未得到王、或僧團、

<sup>1</sup> Pāci.IV,224(CS:pg.290)：「居士子：居士的兒子及(兒子的)兄弟。」

<sup>2</sup> Pāci.IV,224(CS:pg.290)：「奴婢(奴隸)：在家中生的(奴婢)、買來的、擄掠的」。

<sup>3</sup> Pāci.IV,224(CS:pg.289)：「訴訟：告官(爭論人事、忿怒事)。」 Sp.Pāci.IV,907 (CS:Pāci.pg.180)：「仲裁：法官裁判。凡是涉及出家人的訴訟之語。」 akārikā(=aṭṭakārikā),【陰】即女訴訟當事人。

<sup>4</sup> 《四分比丘尼戒本》(T22.1032.1)：「若比丘尼詣官言，居士、若居士兒、若奴、若客作人，若晝、若夜、若一念頃、若彈指頃、若須臾頃，是比丘尼犯初法應捨僧伽婆尸沙。」

Pāci.IV,225(CS:pg.290)：「不犯：被人強牽去者、乞求保護者、不指定人(而訴訟)、癡狂者、心亂者、痛惱者、最初之犯行者。」

**2. Should any bhikkhunī knowingly give Acceptance (*upasampada*) to a woman thief sentenced to death, without having obtained permission from the king or the Community**

saṅgham vā gaṇam vā pūgam vā seṇīm vā, aññatra kappā vutṭhāpeyya,  
 僧團 或 團體 或 社團 或 公會 或 別的 適切(的狀況) 使受具戒  
 saṅgha gaṇa pūga seṇī aññatra kappa vutṭhāpeti  
 m.s.Acc. m.s.Acc. m.s.Acc. f.s.Acc. adj. m.p.Nom. caus.(3s.opt.)

或團體、或社團、或公會的允許<sup>3</sup>，而指使受具足戒者，除了適切的狀況<sup>4</sup>，

or the (governing) council or the (governing) committee or the (governing) guild — unless the woman is allowable (i.e., already ordained in another sect or with other bhikkhunīs)

ayampi bhikkhunī paṭhamāpattikam dhammam āpannā nissāraṇīyam saṅghādisesam.  
 這 也 比丘尼 第一次 違犯 法 犯罪 逐出 僧殘  
 ayaṁ pi bhikkhunī paṭhama + āpattika dhamma āpannā nissāraṇīya saṅghādisesa  
 f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom m.s.Acc. m.s.Acc. pp.(f.s.Acc.) grd.(f.s.Acc.) adj.(f.s.Acc.)

既使這比丘尼初次犯法，也是犯應被逐出的僧殘。<sup>5</sup>

this bhikkhunī, also, as soon as she has fallen into the first act of offence, is to be (temporarily) driven out, and it entails initial and subsequent meetings of the Community. [See Mv.I.43.1]

### \*3.Ekagāmantaragamanasikkhāpadam 獨往村(等)

3. Yā pana bhikkhunī ekā vā gāmantaram gaccheyya, ekā vā nadīpāram gaccheyya,  
 任何 比丘尼 單獨 村 內部 去 單獨 或 河 彼岸 去  
 ya pana bhikkhunī gāma + antara gacchati nadī+pāra gacchati  
 f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom adj.(f.s.Acc.) m. f.s.Acc. 3s.opt. adj.(f.s.Acc.) f. n.s.Acc. 3s.opt.

<sup>1</sup> Pāci.IV,226(CS:pg.292)：「明知：自知或他人告知。或該女自白。」

<sup>2</sup> Pāci.IV,226(CS:pg.292)：「處分：凡是已作了處分(或處死)」。「已作了處罰」：指通緝中。「賊女」：偷拿值五個摩沙迦或五個摩沙迦被稱為女賊。」 Māsaka,【陽】直譯：摩沙迦(當時的錢幣)。規定偷竊五摩沙迦(古譯：五錢)或五摩沙迦以上的物品構成死罪，是比照印度摩揭陀當時的國法。五個摩沙迦相當於一個 pāda。《五分律》《四分律》《十誦律》皆譯為「錢」，《僧祇律》譯為「分」。

《四分比丘尼戒本》(T22.1032.1)：「罪應死，人所知。」

<sup>3</sup> Pāci.IV,226(CS:pg.292)：「王：由王所支配，應得王之許可。僧團：由僧團所支配，應得僧團之許可。團體：由團體所支配，應得團體之許可。社團：由社團所支配，應得社團之許可。公會：由公會所支配，應得公會之許可。」

<sup>4</sup> Pāci.IV,227(CS:pg.292)：「除了(某種)適切的狀況：適切的狀況除外。適切的狀況有二：先於外道中出家或於其它之比丘尼僧中出家者。除適切的狀況外，欲授具足戒而求僧眾、或阿闍梨、或衣、或鉢、或結戒場者，犯突吉羅。白(眾)者突吉羅，二羯摩者偷蘭遮。作完羯摩者，和尚僧殘，眾僧及阿闍梨突吉羅。」  
 《四分律》卷第二十二：「不犯者。若不知。或白王大臣種姓。若罪應死王聽出家。若有罪聽出家。若於繫縛中放令出家。若救使得脫不犯。不犯者最初未制戒。癡狂心亂痛惱所纏。」(《律部 T22》p.720.1)

<sup>5</sup> Pāci.IV,227(CS:pg.293)：「不犯：不知而使受具者、得到許可而使受具者、有適切的狀況而使受具者、癡狂者、最初之犯行者。」

### 三、若比丘尼獨往村<sup>1</sup>中，或獨渡水，

3. Should any bhikkhunī go among villages alone or go to the other shore of a river alone,

ekā vā rattim vippavaseyya, ekā vā gaṇamhā ohiyeyya,  
 單獨 或 夜 離家、缺席 單獨 或 大眾 逗留  
 eka ratti vippavasati gaṇa ohīyati  
 adj.(f.s.Acc.) f.s.Acc. 3s.opt. adj.(f.s.Acc.) m.s.Abl. 3s.opt.

或晚上獨宿、或離眾而獨留於後者，

or stay away for a night alone or fall behind her companion(s) alone:

ayampi bhikkhunī paṭhamāpattikam dhammam āpannā nissāraṇīyam saṅghādisesam.  
 這 也 比丘尼 第一次 違犯 法 犯罪 逐出 僧殘  
 ayarūpi bhikkhunī paṭhama + āpattika dhamma āpannā nissāraṇīya saṅghādisesa  
 f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom m.s.Acc. m.s.Acc. pp.(f.s.Acc.) grd.(f.s.Acc.) adj.(f.s.Acc.)

既使這比丘尼初次犯法，也是犯應被逐出的僧殘。<sup>2</sup>

this bhikkhunī, also, as soon as she has fallen into the first act of offence, is to be (temporarily) driven out, and it entails initial and subsequent meetings of the Community.

### \*4.Ukkhittaka-osāraṇasikkhāpadam(將)被罷黜者復權

4.Yā pana bhikkhunī samaggena saṅghena ukkhittaṁ bhikkhuniṁ dhammena vinayena  
 任何 比丘尼 和合、和諧 僧團 中止 比丘尼 法 律  
 ya pana bhikkhunī samagga saṅgha ukkitta bhikkhuni dhamma vinaya  
 f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom m.s.Ins. m.s.Ins. pp.(m.s.Acc.) f.s.Acc. m.s.Ins. m.s.Ins.

### 四、若比丘尼，不知道大眾的欲願，將和合僧依法、依律、

4. Should any bhikkhunī — without having obtained permission from the Community who performed the act, without knowing the desire of the group —

satthusāsanena anapaloketvā kārakasaṅgamam, anaññāya gaṇassa chandaṁ osāreyya,

<sup>1</sup> Pāci.IV,230(CS:pg.296) : **Ekā vā gāmantaram gaccheyyāti** parikkhittassa gāmassa parikkhepaṁ paṭhamam pādām atikkāmentiyā āpatti thullaccayassa, dutiyam pādām atikkāmentiyā āpatti saṅghādisesassa. Aparikkhittassa gāmassa upacāram paṭhamam pādām atikkāmentiyā āpatti thullaccayassa. Dutiyam pādām atikkāmentiyā āpatti saṅghādisesassa.(或獨往村中：有圍牆的村落，第一腳跨越圍牆者，犯偷蘭遮，第二腳跨越圍牆者，犯僧殘。沒有圍牆的村落，第一腳跨越村落者，犯偷蘭遮，第二腳跨越村落者，犯僧殘。)

**Ekā vā nadīpāram gaccheyyāti** nadī nāma timaṇḍalam paṭicchādetvā yattha katthaci uttarantiyā bhikkhuniyā antaravāsako temiyati. Paṭhamam pādām uttarantiyā āpatti thullaccayassa. Dutiyam pādām uttarantiyā āpatti saṅghādisesassa. (或獨渡水：河者，指淹沒(肚臍及兩膝)三輪。比丘尼不論於何處渡之，必弄濕下衣，第一腳渡者，犯偷蘭遮，第二腳渡者，犯僧殘。)

**Ekā vā rattiṁ vippavaseyyāti** saha aruṇuggamanā dutiyikāya bhikkhuniyā hatthapāsam vijahantiyā āpatti thullaccayassa. Vijahite āpatti saṅghādisesassa.(或夜晚獨宿：夜晚捨離友伴比丘尼一臂之距，至黎明即犯偷蘭遮，已離開者，犯僧殘。)

**Ekā vā gaṇamhā ohīyeyyāti** agāmake araññe dutiyikāya bhikkhuniyā dassanūpacāram vā savanūpacāram vā vijahantiyā āpatti thullaccayassa. Vijahite āpatti saṅghādisesassa.(或離眾而獨留於後者：於無村落之空曠處，捨離友伴比丘尼之眼界或耳界者，已離開者，犯僧殘。)

<sup>2</sup> Pāci.IV,230(CS:pg.296) : 「不犯：友伴比丘尼離去，或還俗，或歸外道，發生事故時，癡狂者，最初之犯行者。」

(大)師 教法 不 尊敬	作者 僧團	無知	大眾	欲	恢復
satthu+sāsana an + apaloketi	kāraka + saṅgha	anaññāya	gaṇa	chanda osāreti (ava+ <b>sar</b> 動轉)	恢復
m. m.s.Ins. ger.	m. m.s.Nom.	f.s.Gen.	m.s.Gen.	n.s.Acc.	3s.opt.

依師教罷黜之不恭敬的比丘尼復權者，

restore a bhikkhunī whom a Community acting harmony in line with the Dhamma, in line with the Vinaya, in line with the teacher's instructions, has suspended:

ayampi bhikkhunī paṭhamāpattikam dhammam āpannā nissāraṇīyam saṅghādisesam.
這 也 比丘尼 第一次 違犯 法 犯罪 逐出 僧殘
ayañ pi bhikkhunī paṭhama + āpattika dhamma āpannā nissāraṇīya saṅghādisesa
f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom m.s.Acc. m.s.Acc. pp.(f.s.Acc.) grd.(f.s.Acc.) adj.(f.s.Acc.)

既使這比丘尼初次犯法，也是犯應被逐出的僧殘。<sup>1</sup>

this bhikkhunī, also, as soon as she has fallen into the first act of offence, is to be (temporarily) driven out, and it entails initial and subsequent meetings of the Community. [See Cv.I.28-29]

## \*5.Bhojanapatiṭṭahaṇapathamasikkhāpadam 接受食物(1)

5. Yā pana bhikkhunī avassutā avassutassa purisapuggalassa hatthato khādanīyam vā,
任何 比丘尼 充滿欲望 充滿欲望的 男人 補伽羅 手 硬食 或
ya pana bhikkhunī avassuta avasuta purisa + puggala hattha khādati
f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom adj.(m.s.) pp.(m.s.Gen.) m. m.s.Gen. m.s.Dat. grd.

五、若比丘尼，有染心，從有染心男子的手，接受硬食、

5. Should any bhikkhunī, lusting, having received staple

bhojanīyam vā sahatthā paṭiggahetvā khādeyya vā bhuñjeyya vā,
軟食 或 自手 接受 噉、咀嚼 或 食 或
bhojanīya sahatthā paṭiggahāti khādati bhuñjati
grd. m.s.Dat. ger. 3s.opt. 3s.opt.

接受軟食<sup>2</sup>，或親手接受而咀嚼或食用，

or non-staple food from the hand of a lusty man, consume or chew it:

ayampi bhikkhunī paṭhamāpattikam dhammam āpannā nissāraṇīyam saṅghādisesam.
這 也 比丘尼 第一次 違犯 法 犯罪 逐出 僧殘
ayañ pi bhikkhunī paṭhama + āpattika dhamma āpannā nissāraṇīya saṅghādisesa
f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom m.s.Acc. m.s.Acc. pp.(f.s.Acc.) grd.(f.s.Acc.) adj.(f.s.Acc.)

既使這比丘尼初次犯法，也是犯應被逐出的僧殘。<sup>3</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Pāci.IV,232(CS:pg.299)：「不犯：僧伽作羯摩許可復權者，已知大眾欲使復權者，行懺悔法以復權者，僧伽作羯摩使復權時不在現場者，癡狂者，最初之犯行者。」

<sup>2</sup> Pāci.IV,233(CS:pg.300)：「硬食(蔬果食)：除了五種穀肉食、水與楊枝(齒木)之外的一切食物。軟食(穀肉食)：指飯、粥、麥、魚、肉。」

<sup>3</sup> 《四分比丘尼戒本》(T22.1032.2)：「若比丘尼，教比丘尼作如是語，大姊！彼有染污心、無染污心，能那汝何？汝自無染污心，於彼若得食，以時清淨受取，此比丘尼犯初法應捨僧伽婆尸沙。」

Pāci.IV,234(CS:pg.301)：「不犯：兩人俱無染心，知無染心而受，癡狂者，最初之犯行者。」

this bhikkhunī, also, as soon as she has fallen into the first act of offence, is to be (temporarily) driven out, and it entails initial and subsequent meetings of the Community.

## \*6.Bhojanapati<sup>g</sup>gahaṇadutiyasikkhāpadam 接受食物(2)

6.Yā pana bhikkhunī evam vadeyya “kim te, ayye, eso purisapuggalo karissati  
 任何 比丘尼 如是 說 如何 她們(=妳) 大姐 這 男人 補伽羅 作  
 ya pana bhikkhunī vadati kim ta ayye eta purisa + puggala karoti  
 f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom. adv. 3s.opt. adv. 3p.Nom. f.s.Voc. m.s.Nom. m. m.s.Nom. 3s.fut.

六、若比丘尼這樣說：「大姐！若是妳沒有染心，而那男人

6. Should any bhikkhunī say, “What does it matter to you whether this man is lustng or not,

avassuto vā anavassuto vā, yato tvam anavassutā, iṅgha, ayye,  
 (充滿)欲望 或 無欲望 或 由於 妳 無欲望 喂、聽我說 大姐  
 avassuto an+avassuto yato tvam an+avassuta iṅgha  
 m.s.Nom. m.s.Nom. m.s.Abl.

有染心或無染心又如何，聽我說，大姐！

when you are not lustng? Please, lady,

yam te eso purisapuggalo deti khādanīyam vā bhojanīyam vā,  
 這 男人 補伽羅 紿 硬食 或 軟食 或  
 ya so eta purisa+puggala deti khādati bhojanīya  
 f.s.Voc. m.s.Nom. m.s.Nom. 3s.pr. ger.

tam tvam sahatthā patiggahetvā khāda vā bhuñja vā”ti,  
 這 妳 自手 接受 啥、咀嚼 或 食 或  
 ta tvam sahattha patiggahāti khādati bhuñjati  
 2s.Nom. m.s.Dat. ger. 3s.imp. 3s.imp.

妳可以親手接受這男人給硬食或軟食而 啥、食。」

take what the man is giving — staple or non-staple food — with your own hand and consume or chew it”:

ayampi bhikkhunī paṭhamāpattikam dhammam āpannā nissāraṇīyam saṅghādisesam.  
 這 也 比丘尼 第一次 違犯 法 犯罪 逐出 僧殘  
 ayaṁ pi bhikkhunī paṭhama + āpattika dhamma āpannā nissāraṇīya saṅghādisesa  
 f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom. m.s.Acc. m.s.Acc. pp.(f.s.Acc.) grd.(f.s.Acc.) adj.(f.s.Acc.)

既使這比丘尼初次犯法，也是犯應被逐出的僧殘。<sup>1</sup>

this bhikkhunī, also, as soon as she has fallen into the first act of offence, is to be (temporarily) driven out, and it entails initial and subsequent meetings of the Community.

<sup>1</sup> Pāci.IV,235(CS:pg.305)：「不犯：知「無染心」而勸說者，說「瞋者不受」而勸說者，說「親族之憐愍而不受」勸說者，癡狂者，最初之犯行者。」

## 7.Sañcarittasikkhāpadam 作媒人(=Bhikkhu Saṅghādiseso 5)

**7.Yā pana bhikkhunī sañcarittam samāpajjeyya itthiyā vā purisamatim purisassa vā**  
 任何 連接詞 比丘尼 媒人 成為 女子 或 男子 主意 男子 或  
 ya pana bhikkhunī sañcaritta samāpajjati itthī vā pruisa+mati purisa vā  
 f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom. n.s.Acc. 3s.opt. f.s.Dat. conj. m. f.s.Acc. m.s.Dat. conj.

七、若比丘尼成為媒人，傳達男子的意思給女子或女子的意思給男子，

7. Should any bhikkhunī engage in conveying a man's intentions to a woman or a woman's intentions to a man, proposing marriage or paramourage — even if only for a momentary liaison:

itthīmatim, jāyattane vā jārattane vā antamaso tañkhaṇikā'yapi, saṅghādisesam.  
 女子 主意 妻子的性質 或 情婦的性質 或 乃至 暫時之妻 也 僧殘  
 itthī+mati jāyatana vā jāra+tva vā antamaso tañkhaṇikā api saṅghādisesa  
 f. f.s.Acc. n.s.Loc. conj. n.s.Loc. conj. adv. f.s.Loc. ind. adj.(f.s.Acc.)

不論成就妻子或情婦<sup>1</sup>，乃至只是暫時之妻，犯僧殘。<sup>2</sup>

this bhikkhunī, also, as soon as she has fallen into the first act of offence, is to be (temporarily) driven out, and it entails initial and subsequent meetings of the Community.

## 8.Duṭṭhadosasikkhāpadam 惡意、瞋恨(無憑據地毀謗比丘尼) (=Bhikkhu Saṅghādiseso 8)

**8.Yā pana bhikkhunī bhikkhunīm duṭṭhā dosā appatītā amūlakena pārājikena dhammena**  
 任何 連接詞 比丘尼 比丘尼 惡意 瞋 不滿 無 根據 驅擯 戒條  
 ya pana bhikkhunī bhikkhunī duṭṭha dosa appatīta a+mūlaka pārājika dhamma  
 f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom. f.s.Acc. f.s.Nom. f.s.Nom. f.s.Nom. m.s.Ins. m.s.Ins. m.s.Ins.

八、若比丘尼懷著惡意、瞋恨、不滿，無憑無據地毀謗比丘尼犯驅擯戒，

8. Should any bhikkhunī — corrupt, aversive, disgruntled — charge a bhikkhunī with an unfounded case entailing defeat,

anuddhamseyya, “app’eva nāma nam imamhā brahmacariyā cāveyyan”ti, tato aparena  
 毁謗 或許 她 這 梵行 使...脫離 從此 接著  
 anuddhamseti api + eva nāma ta ima brahmacariyā cāveyyam+iti ta apara  
 3s.opt. adv. f.s.Acc. m.s.Abl. f.s.Abl. 1s.opt. ind. m.s.Abl. m.s.Ins.

(心想)：「或許我可因此使她脫離梵行。」

(thinking), “Perhaps I may bring about her fall from this celibate life,”

samayena samanuggāhiyamānā vā asamanuggāhiyamānā vā, amūlakañ c’eva tam  
 時候 究明 或 不 究明 或 無 根據 既 這  
 samaya saṁ+anu+gāṇhati vā ā+saṁ+anu+gāṇhati vā a+mūlaka ca+eva sa  
 m.s.Ins. ppr.(f.s.Nom.) conj. ppr.(f.s.Nom.) conj. m.s.Nom. adv. m.s.Nom.

<sup>1</sup> Vin.(Pārā.III,139. ; CS:pg.202)：「妻子的性質：將變成妻子。情婦的性質：將變成情婦。」

<sup>2</sup> 《四分比丘尼戒本》(T22.1032.1)：「若比丘尼媒嫁，持男語語女，持女語語男，若為成婦事，若私通事，乃至須臾，是比丘尼犯初法應捨僧伽婆尸沙。」

Pāci.IV,237(CS:pg.306)：「不犯：非同學者，放棄者，癡狂者，最初之犯行者。」

從此之後，不管被詢問或未被詢問，這案件既無根據，  
then regardless of whether or not she is cross-examined on a later occasion,

adhikaraṇam hoti, bhikkhunī ca dosam patiṭṭhāti,  
 案件 是 比丘尼 又 瞠 承認  
 adhikaraṇa < hū bhikkhunī ca dosa patiṭṭhāti  
 n.s.Nom. 3s.pr. f.s.Nom. conj. m.s.Acc. 3s.pr.

而且比丘尼承認瞋恨，

if the issue is unfounded and the bhikkhunī confesses her aversion:

ayampi bhikkhunī paṭhamāpattikam dhammam āpannā nissāraṇīyam saṅghādisesam.  
 這 也 比丘尼 第一次 違犯 法 犯罪 逐出 僧殘  
 ayaṁ pi bhikkhunī paṭhama + āpattika dhamma āpannā nissāraṇīya saṅghādisesa  
 f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom m.s.Acc. m.s.Acc. pp.(f.s.Acc.) grd.(f.s.Acc.) adj.(f.s.Acc.)

既使這比丘尼初次犯法，也是犯應被逐出的僧殘。<sup>1</sup>

this bhikkhunī, also, as soon as she has fallen into the first act of offence, is to be (temporarily) driven out, and it entails initial and subsequent meetings of the Community.

#### 9.Aññabhāgīyasikkhāpadam 拿關涉它案作藉口(毀謗為犯驅擯)(=Bhikkhu Saṅghādiseso 9)

9.Yā pana bhikkhunī bhikkhunīm dutṭhā dosā appatītā aññabhāgīyassa adhikaraṇassa kiñcidesam  
 任何 比丘尼 比丘尼 惡意 瞠 不滿 其他 部分、關連 事件 任何 區域  
 ya pana bhikkhunī bhikkhunī dutṭha dosa appatīta añña + bhāgīya adhikaraṇa kiñci + desa  
 f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom. f.s.Acc. f.s.Nom. f.s.Nom. f.s.Nom. m.s.Gen. n.s.Gen. ind. m.s.Acc.

九、若比丘尼懷著惡意、瞋恨、不滿，拿關涉到其它案件的某個點作藉口<sup>2</sup>，

9. Should any bhikkhunī — corrupt, aversive, disgruntled — using as a mere ploy an aspect of an issue that pertains otherwise,

lesamattam upādāya pārājikena dhammena anuddhamseyya  
 瑣事、藉口 抓住 驅擯 法 毀謗  
 lesa + matta upādāya pārājika dhamma anuddhamseti  
 m. pp.(m.s.Acc.) ger. f.s.Ins. f.s.Ins. 3s.opt.

毀謗為犯驅擯戒，

charge a bhikkhunī with a case entailing defeat, (thinking),

“app’eva nāma nam imamhā brahmacariyā cāveyyan”ti, tato aparena samayena  
 或許 她 這 梵行 使...脫離 從此 接著 時  
 api + eva nāma ta ima brahmacariyā <cavati 脫離+iti ta apara samaya  
 adv. f.s.Acc. m.s.Abl. f.s.Abl. 1s.opt. ind. m.s.Abl. m.s.Ins. n.s.Ins.

(心想)：「或許我可因此使她脫離梵行。」

<sup>1</sup> 《四分比丘尼戒本》(T22.1032.1)：「若比丘尼瞋恚不喜，以無根波羅夷法謗，欲破彼清淨行，後於異時，若問、若不問，是事無根說，我瞋恚故如是語，是比丘尼犯初法應捨僧伽婆尸沙。」

<sup>2</sup> 拿關涉到其它案件的某個點作藉口：取類似點，亂加比配。《四分比丘尼戒本》(T22.1032.1)：「於異分事中取片」。

“Perhaps I may bring about her fall from this celibate life,”

samanuggāhiyamānā vā asamanuggāhiyamānā vā, amūlakañ c’eva  
 究明 或 不 究明 或 無 根據 和  
 sam+anu+gāñhati vā a+sam+anu+gāñhati vā a + mūlaka ca+eva  
 ppr.(f.s.Nom.) conj. ppr.(f.s.Nom.) conj. adj.(m.s.Nom.) adv.

從此之後，不管被詢問或未被詢問，這案件既無根據，

then regardless of whether or not she is cross-examined on a later occasion, if the issue pertains otherwise, an aspect used as a mere ploy,

tam adhikaraṇam hoti. Kocideso lesamatto upādinno, bhikkhunī ca dosam patiṭṭhāti,  
 這 案件 是 某人 說 瑣事、藉口 生起 比丘尼 又 瞞 承認  
 ta adhikaraṇa <hū koci+deso lesamatto upādinno bhikkhunī ca dosa patiṭṭhāti  
 n.s.Nom. n.s.Nom. 1s.pr. m.s.Nom. adj.(m.s.Nom.) pp.(m.s.Nom.) f.s.Nom. conj. m.s.Acc. 3s.pr.

而且比丘尼承認瞋恨，

and the bhikkhunī confesses her aversion:

ayampi bhikkhunī paṭhamāpattikam dhammam āpannā nissāraṇīyam saṅghādisesam.  
 這 也 比丘尼 第一次 違犯 法 犯罪 逐出 僧殘  
 ayam pi bhikkhunī paṭhama + āpattika dhamma āpannā nissāraṇīya saṅghādisesa  
 f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom. m.s.Acc. m.s.Acc. pp.(f.s.Acc.) grd.(f.s.Acc.) adj.(f.s.Acc.)

既使這比丘尼初次犯法，也是犯應被逐出的僧殘。<sup>1</sup>

this bhikkhunī, also, as soon as she has fallen into the first act of offence, is to be (temporarily) driven out, and it entails initial and subsequent meetings of the Community.

#### \*10.Sikkhaṇpaccācikkhaṇasikkhāpadam 捨學(等)

10. Yā pana bhikkhunī kupyatā anattamanā evam vadeyya “Buddham paccācikkhāmi  
 任何 比丘尼 生氣 不 高興 如是 說 佛陀 拒絕  
 ya pana bhikkhunī kupyata an+attamana vadati Buddha paccācikkhati  
 f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom. adj.(f.s.Nom.) adv. 3s.opt. m.s.Acc. 1s.pr.

十、若比丘尼憤怒不悅時，這樣說：「我捨佛，

10. Should any bhikkhunī, angry and displeased, say, “I repudiate the Buddha,

Dhammam paccācikkhāmi, Saṅgam paccācikkhāmi, sikkham paccācikkhāmi,  
 法 拒絕 僧團 拒絕 學、紀律 拒絕  
 Dhamma paccācikkhati Saṅga paccācikkhati sikkhā paccācikkhati

<sup>1</sup> 《四分比丘尼戒本》(T22.1032.1)：「若比丘尼瞋恚不喜，於異分事中取片，非波羅夷比丘尼，以無根波羅夷法謗，欲破彼人梵行。後於異時，若問、若不問，知是異分事中取片，彼比丘尼住瞋恚，故作如是說，是比丘尼犯初法應捨僧伽婆尸沙。」

Pāci.IV,238(CS:pg.309)：「不犯：非同學者，放棄者，癡狂者，最初之犯行者。」

m.s.Acc.

1s.pr.

m.s.Acc.

1s.pr.

f.s.Acc.

1s.pr.

**我捨法，我捨僧，我捨學，**

I repudiate the Dhamma, I repudiate the Saṅgha, I repudiate the Training.

kinnumāva samanīyo yā samanīyo sakyadhītaro, santaññāpi samanīyo  
 何以不僅沙門尼彼沙門尼釋迦女其他也沙門尼  
 kim+nu+mā+eva samanī ya samanī sakyadhītaro santaññā pi samanī  
 f.s.Acc. f.s.Acc. f.s.Acc. f.s.Acc. 1s.pr. f.s.Acc.

**哪裡只有這沙門尼是釋迦沙門尼，也有其他**

Since when were the Sakyan-daughter contemplatives the only contemplatives? There are other contemplatives who are

lajjiniyo kukkuccikā sikkhākāmā, tāsāham santike brahmacariyam carissāmī’ti.  
 有羞恥的謹慎的學欲這彼處我鄰近梵行往、漫遊  
 lajjati kukkuccika sikkhā+kāmā tā+sā+ahaṁ santike brahmacariya carati (car+a) ti  
 adj.(m.s.Acc.) adj.(m.s.Acc.) adj.(m.s.Acc.) adv. f.s.Acc. 1s.fut.

**有羞恥的、謹慎的、有學(戒)欲的沙門尼，我將去那裡修梵行。**

conscientious, scrupulous, and desirous of training. I will practice the holy life in their company,”

Sā bhikkhunī bhikkhunīhi evamassa vacanīyā “māyye kūpitā anattamanā evam avaca  
 這比丘尼比丘尼如是又有說、勸告勿大姐生氣不高興如是說  
 ta bhikkhunī bhikkhunī evam+atti vuccati mā kūpita an+attamana vadati  
 f.s.Nom. f.s.Nom. f.p.Ins. adv. 3s.opt. grd.(f.s.Nom.) f.s.Voc. adj.(f.s.Nom.) adj.(f.s.Nom.) adv. 3s.opt.

**這比丘尼勸告憤怒不悅時，這樣說：「大姐！不要憤怒不悅，這樣說：**

the bhikkhunīs are to admonish her thus: “Lady, don’t — angry and displeased — say,

‘Buddham paccācikkhāmi, dhammam paccācikkhāmi, saṅgham paccācikkhāmi,  
 佛陀拒絕法拒絕僧團拒絕  
 Buddha paccācikkhati Dhamma paccācikkhati Saṅgha paccācikkhati  
 m.s.Acc. 1s.pr. m.s.Acc. 1s.pr. m.s.Acc. 1s.pr.

**「我捨佛，我捨法，我捨僧，我捨學，**

‘I repudiate the Buddha, I repudiate the Dhamma, I repudiate the Sangha, I repudiate the Training.

sikkham paccācikkhāmi, kinnumāva samanīyo yā samanīyo sakyadhītaro,  
 學、紀律拒絕何以不僅沙門尼彼沙門女(尼)釋迦女(尼)  
 sikkhā paccācikkhati kim+nu+mā+eva samanī ya samanī sakyadhītaro  
 f.s.Acc. 1s.pr. adv. f.p.Acc. f.p.Acc. f.p.Acc. f.p.Acc.

**哪裡只有這邊的釋迦沙門尼，**

Since when were the Sakyan-daughter contemplatives the only contemplatives?

santaññāpi samanīyo lajjiniyo kukkuccikā sikkhākāmā,

有 其他 也 沙門尼 有羞恥的 謹慎的 學 欲  
santa+aññā+ pi samanī lajjati kukkuccika sikkhā+kāmā  
(m.n.p.Nom.) f.p.Acc. adj.(m.p.Acc.) adj.(m.p.Acc.) adj.(m.p.Acc.)

也有其他有羞恥的、謹慎的、欲學(戒)的沙門尼，

There are other contemplatives who are conscientious, scrupulous, and desirous of training.

tāsāham santike brahmacariyam carissāmī”ti. Abhiramāyye,

這 彼處 我 鄰近 梵行 往、漫遊 應歡喜 大姐  
tā +sā+ahām santike brahmacariya carati (**car+a**) ti abhirama+ayye  
adv. f.s.Acc. 1s.fut. 2s.imp. f.s.Voc.

我將去那裡修梵行。」大姐！應該高興！

I will practice the holy life in their company.' Take delight, lady.

svākkhāto dhammo, cara brahmacariyam sammā dukkhassa antakiriyāyā”ti,

善 已被說 法 行 梵行 正確地、徹底地 苦的 終止  
su+akkhāta dhammo <carati brahmacariya sammā dukkha antakiriyā ti  
pp.(m.s.Nom.) m.s.Nom. 2s.imp. f.s.Acc. adj.(f.s.Gen.) f.s.Gen.

法已被善說，當修梵行！徹底地終止苦。

The Dhamma is well-expounded. Follow the holy life for the right ending of suffering."

Evañca sā bhikkhunī bhikkhunīhi vuccamānā tath’eva paggaṇheyya,  
如此 和 這 比丘尼 比丘尼 勸告 如此 仍 努力  
evam +ca ta bhikkhunī bhikkhunī vuccati tathā + eva pa + gaṇhāti<(gah 拿+nhā)  
adv.conj. f.s.Nom. f.s.Nom. f.p.Ins. ppr.(f.s.Nom.) adv. 3s.opt.

該比丘尼被諸比丘尼這樣勸告時，仍然那樣堅持，

And should that bhikkhunī, thus admonished by the bhikkhunīs, persist as before,

sā bhikkhunī bhikkhunīhi yāvatatiyam samanubhāsitabbā tassa paṭinissaggāya.

這 比丘尼 比丘尼 直到 第三 勸告 它 放棄  
ta bhikkhunī bhikkhunī yāva + tatiyam samanubhāsatī ta paṭinissajjati  
f.s.Nom. f.s.Nom. f.p.Ins. adv. grd.(f.s.Nom.) m.s.Gen. m.s.Dat.

諸比丘尼應該乃至三次勸告該比丘尼放棄它。

the bhikkhunīs are to rebuke her up to three times so as to desist.

Yāvatatiyāñ’ce samanubhāsiyamānā tam paṭinissajjeyya, icc’etam kusalarā. No ce paṭinissajjeyya,

直到 第三 如果 勸告 它 放棄 如是 那 善 不 如果 放棄  
yāva+tatiyam+ce samanubhāsatī ta paṭinissajjati iti+ eta kusala no ce paṭinissajjati  
m.s.Acc. conj. ppr.(f.s.Nom.) m.s.Acc. 3s.opt. n.s.Nom. n.s.Nom. adv. conj. 3s.opt.

如果到了第三次被勸告時，(她)放棄它，那就好。如果不放棄，

If while being rebuked up to three times she desists, that is good. If she does not desist,

ayampi bhikkhunī yāvatatiyakam dhammarā āpannā nissāraṇīyam saṅghādisesam  
 這也 比丘尼 直到 第三 法 犯 逐出 僧殘  
 ayam+pi bhikkhunī yāva+tatiyaka dhamma āpannā nissāraṇīya saṅghādisesa  
 f.s.Nom. f.s.Nom. m.s.Acc. m.s.Acc. pp.(f.s.Acc.) grd.(f.s.Acc.) adj.(f.s.Acc.)

直到第三次，那麼，該比丘尼犯應逐出的僧殘法。

then this bhikkhunī, also, as soon as she has fallen into the third act of offence, is to be (temporarily) driven out, and it entails initial and subsequent meetings of the Community.

### \*11. Adhikaraṇakupitasikkhāpadam 停止瞋恨

11. Yā pana bhikkhunī kismiñcideva adhikarane paccākatā kupitā anattamanā evam vadeyya  
 任何 比丘尼 某人，任何人 控告 已失望 生氣 不 高興 如是 說  
 ya pana bhikkhunī kismiñci+d+eva adhikaraṇa paccākata kupitā an+attamana vadati  
 f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom. adv. n.s.Loc. pp. (f.s.Nom.) adj.(f.s.Nom.) adj.(f.s.Nom.) adv. 3s.opt.

十一、「若比丘尼，被某尼控告而心情低落，憤怒不悅時，這樣說：

11. Should any bhikkhunī, overthrown in even a trifling issue, angry and displeased, say,

“chandagāminiyo ca bhikkhuniyo, dosagāminiyo ca bhikkhuniyo,  
 貪 引導者 和 比丘尼 瞪 引導者 和 比丘尼  
 chanda+gāmina ca bhikkhunī dosa+gāmina ca bhikkhunī  
 m. f.p.Nom. conj. f.p.Nom. m. f.p.Nom. conj. f.p.Nom.

「那些比丘尼是被貪欲引導的、那些比丘尼是被瞋恨引導的、

“The bhikkhunīs are biased through favoritism, biased through aversion,

mohagāminiyo ca bhikkhuniyo, bhayagāminiyo ca bhikkhuniyo”ti,  
 痴 引導者 和 比丘尼 害怕 引導者 和 比丘尼  
 moha + gāmina ca bhikkhunī bhaya+gāmina ca bhikkhunī  
 m. f.p.Nom. conj. f.p.Nom. n. f.p.Nom. conj. f.p.Nom.

那些比丘尼是被愚痴引導的、那些比丘尼是被恐懼引導的。」

biased through delusion, biased through fear,”

sā bhikkhunī bhikkhunīhi evamassa vacanīyā “māyye,  
 這 比丘尼 比丘尼 如此 勸告 勿 大姐  
 ta bhikkhunī bhikkhunī evam+assa vuccati mā  
 f.p.Nom. f.s.Nom. f.p.Ins. grd.(f.s.Nom.) f.s.Voc.

這位比丘尼勸告該比丘尼說：「大姐！不要這樣說，

the bhikkhunīs are to admonish her thus: “Lady, don’t —

kismiñcideva adhikarane paccākatā kupitā anattamanā evam avaca  
 某人、任何人 控告 已失望 生氣 不 高興 如是 說

kismiñci+d+eva      adhikaraṇa      paccākata      kupitā      an+attamana      vadati  
 adv.                    n.s.Loc.            pp.(f.s.Nom.)    adj.(f.s.Nom.)    adj.(f.s.Nom.)    adv.            3s.aor.

被某尼控告而心情低落，憤怒不悅時，這樣說：

overthrown in even a trifling issue, angry and displeased — say,

‘chandagāminiyo ca bhikkhuniyo, dosagāminiyo ca bhikkhuniyo,  
 欲引導者 和比丘尼 瞳引導者 和比丘尼  
 chanda+gāminiyo ca bhikkhuniyo dosa+gāmina ca bhikkhunī<sup>1</sup>  
 m. f.p.Nom. conj. f.p.Nom. m. f.p.Nom. conj. f.p.Nom.

那些比丘尼是被貪欲引導的、那些比丘尼是被瞋恨引導的、

‘The bhikkhunīs are biased through favoritism, biased through aversion,

mohagāminiyo ca bhikkhuniyo, bhayagāminiyo ca bhikkhuniyo’ti,  
 痴引導者 和比丘尼 害怕引導者 和比丘尼  
 moha + gāmina ca bhikkhunī bhaya + gāmina ca bhikkhunī<sup>1</sup>  
 m. f.p.Nom. conj. f.p.Nom. n. f.p.Nom. conj. f.p.Nom.

那些比丘尼是被愚痴引導的、那些比丘尼是被恐懼引導的。」

biased through delusion, biased through fear.

ayyā kho chandāpi gaccheyya, dosāpi gaccheyya, mohāpi gaccheyya, bhayāpi gaccheyyā”ti.  
 大姐 欲也 去 瞳也 去 癡也 去 恐懼也 去  
 ayyā kho chanda api gacchati dosa api gacchati moha api gacchati bhaya api gacchati ti  
 f.s.Nom. m.p.Nom. 3s.opt. m.p.Nom. 3s.opt. m.p.Nom. 3s.opt. m.p.Nom. 3s.opt.

大姐！妳可能是被貪欲所引導的、被瞋恨所引導的、被愚痴所引導的、被恐懼所引導的。」

It may be that you, lady, are biased through favoritism, biased through aversion,  
 biased through delusion, biased through fear.”

Evañca sā bhikkhunī bhikkhunīhi vuccamānā tath’eva paggañheyya,  
 如此和這比丘尼比丘尼勸告如此仍努力  
 evam+ca ta bhikkhunī bhikkhunī vuccati tathā+eva pa+ganhāti  
 adv.conj. f.s.Nom. f.s.Nom. f.p.Ins. ppr.(f.s.Nom.) adv. 3s.opt.

該比丘尼被諸比丘尼這樣勸告時，仍然那樣堅持，

And should that bhikkhunī, thus admonished by the bhikkhunīs, persist as before,

sā bhikkhunī bhikkhunīhi yāvatatiyām samanubhāsitabbā tassa paṭinissaggāya.  
 這比丘尼比丘尼直到第三勸告它放棄  
 ta bhikkhunī bhikkhunī yāva+tatiyām samanubhāsatī ta paṭinissajjati  
 f.s.Nom. f.s.Nom. f.p.Ins. adv. grd.(f.s.Nom.) m.s.Gen. m.s.Dat.

這位比丘尼應該乃至三次勸告該比丘尼放棄它。

the bhikkhunīs are to rebuke her up to three times so as to desist.

Yāvatatiyāñ'ce samanubhāsiyamāñā tam pañinissajjeyya, icc'etam kusalañ. No ce pañinissajjeyya,  
 直到 第三 如果 勸告 它 放棄 如是 那 善 不 如果 放棄  
 yāva+tatiyāñ + ce samanubhāsatī ta pañinissajjati iti+ eta kusala no ce pañinissajjati  
 m.s.Acc. conj. ppr.(f.s.Nom.) m.s.Acc. 3s.opt. n.s.Nom. n.s.Nom. adv. conj. 3s.opt.

**如果到了第三次被勸告時，(她)放棄它，那就好。如果不放棄，**

If while being rebuked up to three times she desists, that is good. If she does not desist,

ayampi bhikkhunī yāvatatiyakam dhammarñ āpannā nissārañīyam saṅghādisesam  
 這也 比丘尼 直到 第三 法 犯 逐出 僧殘  
 ayam+pi bhikkhunī yāva+tatiyaka dhamma āpannā nissārañīya saṅghādisesa  
 f.s.Nom. f.s.Nom. m.s.Acc. m.s.Acc. pp.(f.s.Acc.) grd.(f.s.Acc.) adj.(f.s.Acc.)

**直到第三次，那麼，該比丘尼犯應逐出的僧殘法。**

then this bhikkhunī, also, as soon as she has fallen into the third act of offence, is to be (temporarily) driven out, and it entails initial and subsequent meetings of the Community.

## \*12.Pāpasamācārapaṭhamasikkhāpadam 惡行(1)

12.Bhikkhuniyo paneva saṁsaṭṭhā viharanti pāpācārā pāpasaddā pāpasilokā  
 比丘尼 親近 住 惡 行 惡 名聲 惡 名望  
 bhikkhunī pana+ eva saṁsaṭṭha viharati pāpā+ cārā pāpā + saddā pāpā + silokā  
 f.p.Nom. pp.(m.s.Nom.) 3p.pr. m.p.Acc. m.p.Acc. m.p.Acc.

**十二、住得親近<sup>1</sup>的比丘尼，行惡行、得惡名聲、壞名望<sup>2</sup>，她們是**

12. In case bhikkhunīs are living entangled, depraved in their conduct, depraved in their reputation, depraved in their notoriety (depraved in their livelihood),

bhikkhunisaṅghassa vihesikā aññamaññissā vajjappaṭicchādikā,  
 比丘尼 僧團 憬亂 相互 罪 覆藏  
 bhikkhunī + saṅgha vihesikā aññamaññissā vajja+paṭicchādika  
 f. m.s.Gen. f.s.Nom. f.s.Nom. f.s.Nom.

**比丘尼僧團的憍亂者，相互掩過飾非者。**

exasperating the Bhikkhuni Community, hiding one another's faults,

tā bhikkhuniyo bhikkhunīhi evamassu vacanīyā “bhaginiyo kho saṁsaṭṭhā viharanti  
 彼 諸比丘尼 比丘尼 如是 說 姐妹 親近 住  
 tā bhikkhunī bhikkhunī evam + assu vuccati bhaginī kho saṁsaṭṭha viharati  
 f.s.Nom. f.s.Nom. f.p.Acc. adv. 1p.opt. grd.(f.s.Nom.) f.p.Nom. pp.(m.s.Nom.) 3p.pr.

**諸比丘尼應對此比丘尼這樣說：住得親近的姐妹，**

the bhikkhunīs are to admonish them thus: “The sisters are living entangled,

pāpācārā pāpasaddā pāpasilokā bhikkhunisaṅghassa vihesikā

<sup>1</sup> Pāci.IV,239CS:Pāci.pg.310)：「住得親近：稱為親近(saṁsaṭṭha(pp. of sam+sṛj 發出)雜居)，為不適當的身體的和講話有關連的親近活動。」 S.22.3./III,11.：「居士！在此，有一類(出家)人與在家混雜居住，同喜，同愁，於樂中樂，於苦中苦，於生起作當作的事，自己陷入其中。」

<sup>2</sup> Pāci.IV,239CS:Pāci.pg.311)：「壞名聲：升起不好的名譽。壞名望：過著壞的邪命生活。」

惡 行 惡 名聲 惡 名望 比丘尼 僧團 憂亂  
 pāpā+ cārā pāpā + saddā pāpā + silokā bhikkhunī + saṅgha vihesika  
 m.p.Acc. m.p.Acc. m.p.Acc. f. m.s.Gen. f.s.Nom.

作諸惡行、得諸惡名聲、壞名望，她們是比丘尼僧團的惱亂者，

depraved in their conduct, depraved in their reputation, depraved in their notoriety,  
 exasperating the Bhikkhunī Community, hiding one another's faults.

aññamaññissā vajjappaticchādikā, viviccathāyye, vivekaññeva bhaginīnam saṅgho vanṇeti' ti,  
 相互 罪 覆藏 離開 大姐 遠離 其他 姐妹 僧團 評論  
 aññamaññissā vajja+paṭicchādika <viviccati viveka+añña+ eva bhaginī saṅgha vanṇeti ti  
 f.s.Nom. n. f.s.Nom. 2s.pr. f.s.Voc. m. adj. f.s.Voc. m.s.Nom. 3s.pr.

互相掩過飾非。大姐！僧團評判妳離開，遠離其他的姐妹。」

Split up (your group), ladies. The Community recommends strict isolation for the sisters."

Evañca tā bhikkhuniyo bhikkhunīhi vuccamānā tath'eva paggaṇheyyum,  
 如此 和 這 比丘尼 比丘尼 勸告 如此 仍 努力  
 evam +ca ta bhikkhunī bhikkhunī vuccati tathā + eva pa + gaṇhāti  
 adv.conj. f.s.Nom. f.s.Nom. f.p.Ins. ppr.(f.s.Nom.) adv. 3s.opt.

該比丘尼被諸比丘尼這樣勸告時，仍然那樣堅持，

And should those bhikkhunīs, thus admonished by the bhikkhunīs, persist as before,

tā bhikkhuniyo bhikkhunīhi yāvatatiyām samanubhāsitabbā tassa paṭinissaggāya.  
 這 比丘尼 比丘尼 直到 第三 勸告 它 放棄  
 ta bhikkhunī bhikkhunī yāva + tatiyām samanubhāsatī ta paṭinissajjati  
 f.s.Nom. f.s.Nom. f.p.Ins. adv. grd.(f.s.Nom.) m.s.Gen. m.s.Dat.

那些比丘尼應該乃至三次勸告該比丘尼放棄它。

the bhikkhunīs are to rebuke them up to three times so as to desist.

Yāvatatiyāñ'ce samanubhāsiyamānā tam paṭinissajjeyya, icc'etam kusalam. No ce paṭinissajjeyum,  
 直到 第三 如果 勸告 它 放棄 如是 那 善 不 如果 放棄  
 yāva+tatiyām + ce samanubhāsatī ta paṭinissajjati iti+ eta kusala no ce paṭinissajjati  
 adv. conj. ppr.(f.s.Nom.) m.s.Acc. 3s.opt. n.s.Nom. n.s.Nom. adv. conj. 3s.opt.

如果到了第三次被勸告時，(她)放棄它，那就好。如果不放棄，

If while being rebuked up to three times by the bhikkhunīs they desist, that is good. If they do not desist,

imāpi bhikkhuniyo yāvatatiyakām dhammām āpannā nissāraṇīyām saṅghādisesam.  
 這 也 比丘尼 直到 第三 法 犯 逐出 僧殘  
 ayam+pi bhikkhunī yāva+tatiyaka dhamma āpannā nissāraṇīya saṅghādisesa  
 f.p.Nom. f.p.Nom. m.s.Acc. m.s.Acc. pp.(f.s.Acc.) grd.(f.s.Acc.) adj.(f.s.Acc.)

直到第三次，那麼，該比丘尼犯應逐出的僧殘法。<sup>1</sup>

then these bhikkhunīs, also, as soon as they have fallen into the third act of offence, are to be (temporarily) driven out, and it entails initial and subsequent meetings of the Community.

### \*13.Pāpasamācāradutiyasikkhāpadam 惡行(2)

13.Yā pana bhikkhunī evam vadeyya “saṁsatṭhāva, ayye, tumhe viharatha,

任何 ya	比丘尼 pana	如是 bhikkhunī	說 vadati	親近 saṁsattha+eva	大姐 ayye	妳們 tumhe	住 viharatha
f.s.Nom.adv.	f.s.Nom.	adv.	3s.opt.	pp.	f.s.Voc.	2p.Nom.	2p.pr.

**十三、若比丘尼這樣說：「大姐！妳們住得親近，**

13. Should any bhikkhunī say (to the bhikkhunīs criticized in the preceding case), “Live entangled, ladies.

mā tumhe nānā viharittha, santi saṅghe aññāpi bhikkhuniyo evācārā  
勿 妳們 種種 住 有 僧團 其他 比丘尼 行  
mā tumhe nānā viharittha atthi saṅgha aññā+pi bhikkhunī eva + cāra  
2p.Nom. 2s.pp. 3s.pr. m.s.Loc. f.p.Acc. m.p.Acc.

**不要(當作)分開住，僧團中其他比丘尼也是同樣(行惡)行、**

Don't live separately. There are other bhikkhunīs in the Community with the same conduct, the same reputation, the same notoriety,

evam+saddā evam+silokā bhikkhuni+saṅghassa vihesikā aññamaññissā vajjappaticchādikā,  
如此 聲 如此 名望 比丘尼 僧團 懵亂 相互 罪 覆藏  
evam+ sada evam+ siloka bhikkhunī + saṅgha vihesika aññamaññissā vajja+paticchādika  
m.p.Acc. m.p.Acc. f. m.s.Gen. f.s.Acc. f.s.Nom. n. f.s.Nom.

**得同樣(惡)名聲、同樣(壞)名望，為比丘尼僧團之惱亂者、相互掩過飾非，**

exasperating the Bhikkhunī Community, hiding one another's faults,

tā saṅgho na kiñci āha tumhaññeva saṅgho uññāya paribhavena  
彼 僧團 不 任何 說 妳們 其他 僧團 鄙視 輕視  
ta saṅgha na kiñci āha tvaṁ+aññā+eva saṅgha uññā paribhava  
f.s.Acc. m.s.Nom. adv. 2s. m.s.Nom. f.s.Ins. m.s.Ins.

**僧團卻不對她們說怎樣，那是由於僧團懦弱，而鄙視、輕視、**

but the Community doesn't say anything to them. It's simply because of your weakness (lack of partisans) that the Community — with contempt, scorn,

<sup>1</sup> 《四分比丘尼戒本》(T22.1033.1)：「若比丘尼相親近住，共作惡行，惡聲流布，展轉共相覆罪，是比丘尼當諫彼比丘尼言：大姊！汝等莫相親近，共作惡行，惡聲流布，共相覆罪，汝等若不相親近，於佛法中得增益安樂住。」是比丘尼諫彼比丘尼時，堅持不捨，是比丘尼應三諫，捨此事故，乃至三諫，捨者善，不捨者，是比丘尼犯三法應捨僧伽婆尸沙。」

akkhantiyā vebhassiyā dubbalyā evamāha— ‘bhaginiyo kho saṁsaṭṭhā viharanti pāpācārā  
 無忍耐、難堪 流言 無力 如是 說 姐妹 親近 住 惡行  
 akkhanti vebhassi dubbalyā evam + āha bhaginī saṁsaṭṭha viharati pāpā+ cārā  
 f.s.Nom. f.s.Ins. n.s.Ins. f.p.Nom. pp. 2p.pr. m.p.Acc.

難堪、流言，才這麼(對我們)說：『諸大姐住得親近，行惡行、  
 intolerance, and threats — says, ‘The sisters are living entangled, depraved in their conduct,

pāpasaddā pāpasilokā bhikkhunisaṅghassa vihesikā aññamaññissā vajjappaticchādikā,  
 惡名聲 惡名望 比丘尼 僧團 懵亂 相互 罪覆藏  
 pāpā + saddā pāpā + silokā bhikkhunī + saṅgha vihesika aññamaññissā vajja+paticchādika  
 m.p.Acc. m.p.Acc. f. m.s.Gen. f.s.Nom. f.s.Nom. n. f.s.Nom.

得壞名聲、壞名望，是比丘尼僧團的惱亂者，互相掩過飾非。  
 depraved in their reputation, depraved in their notoriety.

viviccathāyye, vivekaññeva bhaginīnam saṅgho vanṇeti”ti,  
 離開 大姐 遠離 其他 姐妹 僧團 評論  
 viviccati ayye viveka+añña+ eva bhaginī saṅgha vanṇeti ti  
 2s.pr. f.s.Voc. m. adj. f.p.Gen. m.s.Nom. 3s.pr.

大姐！僧團評判妳離開，遠離其他的姐妹。』」

Split up (your group), ladies. The Community recommends strict isolation for the sisters,””

sā bhikkhunī bhikkhunīhi evamassa vacanīyā “māyye, evam avaca,  
 這比丘尼 比丘尼 如此 是 勸告 不要 大姐 如此 說  
 ta bhikkhunī bhikkhunī +hi evam +< atthi vatti mā evam vatti  
 f.s.Nom. f.s.Nom. f.p.Ins. adv. 3s.opt. grd.(f.s.Nom.) adv. f.s.Voc. adv. 3s.aor.

該比丘尼應該被諸比丘尼這樣勸告：「大姐！不要那樣說：  
 the bhikkhunīs are to admonish her thus: “Lady, don’t say,

samsaṭṭhāva ayye tumhe viharatha, mā tumhe nānā vihariththa,  
 親近 大姐 妳們 住 勿 你們 種種 住  
 samsaṭṭha+eva ayye tumhe viharatha nānā viharati  
 . pp.(f.p.Nom.) f.s.Voc.2p. 2p.pr. adv. 2s.p. adv. 2s.pp.

『大姐！妳們住得親近，妳們不要(當作)分開住。

‘Live entangled, ladies. Don’t live separately.

santi saṅghe aññāpi bhikkhuniyo evācārā evam+saddā evam+silokā  
 有 僧團 其他 比丘尼 行 如此 聲 如此 名望  
 atthi saṅgha aññā+pi bhikkhunī eva+ cārā evam + saddā evam + silokā  
 3s.pr. m.s.Loc. f.s.Acc. m.p.Acc. m.p.Acc. m.p.Acc.

僧團有其他比丘尼也是同樣(行惡)行、得同樣(壞)名聲、同樣(壞)名望，

There are other bhikkhunīs in the Community with the same conduct, the same

reputation, the same notoriety,

bhikkhunisaṅghassa vihesikā aññamaññissā vajjappaṭicchādikā, tā saṅgho na kiñci āha,  
 比丘尼 僧團 懊亂 相互 罪 覆藏 彼僧團 不 任何 說  
 bhikkhunī + saṅgha vihesika aññamaññissā vajja+paṭicchādika ta saṅgha na kiñci āha  
 f. m.s.Gen. f.s.Nom. f.s.Nom. n. f.s.Nom. f.s.Acc. m.s.Nom. adv.

**是比丘尼僧團的惱亂者，互相掩過飾非；僧團卻不對她說怎樣，**

exasperating the Bhikkhunī Community, hiding one another's faults, but the Community doesn't say anything to them.

tumhaññeva saṅgho uññāya paribhavena akkhantiyā vebhassiyā dubbalyā evamā—  
 妳們 其他 僧團 鄙視 輕視 難堪 流言 無力 說  
 tvam+aññā+eva saṅgha uññā paribhava akkhanti vebhassi dubbalyā evamā + āha  
 2s. m.s.Nom. f.s.Ins. m.s.Ins. f.s.Nom. f.s.Ins. n.s.Ins adv.

**那是由於僧團懦弱，而鄙視、輕視、難堪、流言，才這麼(對我們)說：**

It's simply because of your weakness that the Community — with contempt, scorn, intolerance, and threats — says,

'bhaginiyo kho samśatthā viharanti pāpācārā pāpasaddā pāpasilokā  
 姐妹 親近 住 惡行 惡 名聲 惡 名望  
 bhaginī samśattha viharati pāpā+cārā pāpā + saddā pāpā + silokā  
 f.p.Nom. pp.(m.s.Nom.) m.p.Acc. m.p.Acc. m.p.Acc.

**大姐！妳們住得親近，這樣行惡行、得壞名聲、壞名望**

“The sisters are living entangled, depraved in their conduct,

bhikkhunisaṅghassa vihesikā aññamaññissā vajjappaṭicchādikā,  
 比丘尼 僧團 懊亂 相互 罪 覆藏  
 bhikkhunī + saṅgha vihesikā aññamaññissā vajja+paṭicchādika  
 f. m.s.Gen. f.s.Nom. f.s.Nom. n. f.s.Nom.

**是比丘尼僧團的惱亂者，互相掩過飾非。**

depraved in their reputation, depraved in their notoriety.

viviccathāyye, vivekaññeva bhaginīnam saṅgho vanṇeti”ti,  
 離開 大姐 遠離 其他 姐妹 僧團 評論  
 viviccati ayye viveka+añña+ eva bhaginī saṅgha vanṇeti ti  
 2s.pr. f.s.Voc. m. adj. f.p.Gen. m.s.Nom. 3s.pr.

**大姐！僧團評判妳離開，遠離其他的姐妹。』**

Split up (your group), ladies. The Community recommends strict isolation for the sisters.”

Evañca sā bhikkhunī bhikkhunīhi vuccamānā tath'eva paggaṇheyya,  
 如此 和 這 比丘尼 比丘尼 勸告 如此 仍 努力  
 evam +ca ta bhikkhunī bhikkhunī vuccati tathā + eva pa+gaṇhāti  
 adv.conj. f.s.Nom. f.s.Nom. f.p.Ins. ppr.(f.s.Nom.) adv. 3s.opt.

該比丘尼被諸比丘尼這樣勸告時，仍然那樣堅持，

And should that bhikkhunī, thus admonished by the bhikkhunīs, persist as before,

sā	bhikkhunī	bhikkhunīhi	yāvatatiyam	samanubhāsitabbā	tassa	paṭinissaggāya.	
這	比丘尼	比丘尼	直到	第三	勸告	它	放棄
ta	bhikkhunī	bhikkhunī	yāva + tatiyam		samanubhāsatī	ta	paṭinissajjati
f.s.Nom.	f.s.Nom.	f.p.Ins.		adv.	grd.(f.s.Nom.)	m.s.Gen.	m.s.Dat.

諸比丘尼應該乃至三次勸告該比丘尼放棄它。

the bhikkhunīs are to rebuke her up to three times so as to desist.

Yāvatatiyāñ'ce	samanubhāsiyamānā	tañ paṭinissajjeyya,	icc'etañ	kusalam.	No ce	paṭinissajjeyya,					
直到	第三	如果	勸告	它	放棄	如是	那	善	不	如果	放棄
yāva+tatiyāñ+ce	samanubhāsatī	ta	paṭinissajjati	iti+ eta	kusala	no	ce	paṭinissajjati			
adv. conj.	ppr.(f.s.Nom.)	m.s.Acc.	3s.opt.	n.s.Nom.	n.s.Nom.	adv.	conj.	3s.opt.			

如果到了第三次被勸告時，(她)放棄它，那就好。如果不放棄，

If while being rebuked up to three times she desists, that is good. If she does not desist,

ayampi	bhikkhunī	yāvatatiyakam	dhammarām	āpannā	nissāraṇīyam	saṅghādisesam		
這	也	比丘尼	直到	第三	法	犯	逐出	僧殘
ayam+pi	bhikkhunī	yāva+tatiyaka	dhamma	āpannā	nissāraṇīya	saṅghādisesa		
f.s.Nom.	f.s.Nom.	adv.	m.s.Acc.	pp.(f.s.Acc.)	grd.(f.s.Acc.)	adj.(f.s.Acc.)		

直到第三次，那麼，該比丘尼犯應逐出的僧殘法。<sup>1</sup>

then this bhikkhunī, also, as soon as she has fallen into the third act of offence, is to be (temporarily) driven out, and it entails initial and subsequent meetings of the Community.

#### 14.Saṅghabhedakasikkhāpadam 分裂僧團(=Bhikkhu Saṅghādiseso 10)

14.Yā	pana	bhikkhunī	samaggassa	saṅghassa	bhedāya	parakkameyya	bhedanasarīvattanikam
任何	比丘尼	和諧	僧團	破壞	致力	破壞	導致
ya pana	bhikkhunī	samagga	saṅgha	bheda	para-kamati	bhedana+sarīvattanika	
f.s.Nom.adv.	f.s.Nom.	m.s.Gen.	m.s.Gen.	m.s.Dat.	3s.opt.	m.s.Acc.	

十四、若比丘尼致力於破壞和合的僧團，

14. Should any bhikkhunī agitate for a schism in a united Community,

vā	adhikaraṇam	saṁdāya	paggayha	titthayya,
或	案件	採取	努力	安住
vā	adhikaraṇa	saṁdiyati	pa+ganhāti	titthati
conj.	n.s.Acc.	ger.	ger.	3s.opt.

<sup>1</sup> 《四分比丘尼戒本》(T22.1033.1)：「若比丘尼僧為作呵諫時，餘比丘尼教作如是言：『汝等莫別住當共住，我亦見餘比丘尼，不別住共作惡行，惡聲流布共相覆罪，僧以恚故教汝別住。』是比丘尼應諫彼比丘尼言：『大姊！汝莫教餘比丘尼言：汝等莫別住，我亦見餘比丘尼，共住共作惡行，惡聲流布共相覆罪，僧以恚故教汝別住，今正有此二比丘尼，共住共作惡行惡聲流布，共相覆罪更無有餘，若此比丘尼別住，於佛法中有增益安樂住。』是比丘尼諫彼比丘尼時，堅持不捨，是比丘尼應三諫，令捨此事故，乃至三諫捨者善，不捨者，是比丘尼，犯三法應捨僧伽婆尸沙。」

或者是採取導致破壞的案件，並且持續推動。

or should she persist in taking up an issue conducive to schism,

sā bhikkhunī bhikkhunīhi evam assa vacanīyā  
 這 比丘尼 比丘尼 如此 是 勸告  
 ta bhikkhunī bhikkhunī evam atthi vacanīya  
 f.s.Nom. f.s.Nom. f.p.Ins. adv. 3s.opt. grd.(f.s.Nom.)

這位比丘尼應該被諸比丘如此勸告：

the bhikkhunīs are to admonish her thus:

“Māyyā, samaggassa saṅghassa bhedāya parakkami bhedanasamvattanikām vā  
 不要 大姐 和諧 僧團 破壞 致力 破壞 導致 或  
 mā samagga saṅgha bheda para+kamati bhedana+saṁvattanika vā  
 adv. f.s.Voc. m.s.Gen. m.s.Gen. m.s.Dat. 3s.aor. n. m.s.Acc. conj.

adhikaraṇām samādāya paggayha atṭhāsi. sametāyyā, saṅghena,  
 事件 採取 努力 安住 和合 大姐 僧團  
 adhi+karaṇā samādiyati pa+gaṇhāti tiṭṭhati sameti saṅgha  
 n.s.Acc. ger. ger. 3s.aor. 3s.imp. f.s.Nom. m.s.Ins.

「讓大姐不要致力於破壞和合的僧團，也不要採取導致破壞的案件而持續推動」。請大姐與僧團和合，

“Do not, lady, agitate for a schism in a united Community or persist in taking up an issue conducive to schism. Let the lady be reconciled with the Community,

samaggo hi saṅgho sammodamāno avivadamāno ekuddeso phāsu viharati”ti.  
 和諧 因為 僧團 歡喜 無 詛 一 詠 安樂 生活  
 samagga hi saṅgha sammodati a+vivadati eka+uddesa phāsu viharati+iti  
 m.s.Nom. adv. m.s.Nom. ppr.(m.s.Nom.) ppr.(m.s.Nom.) m.s.Nom. m.s.Nom. 3s.pr. ind.

因為和合的僧團歡喜無諛地一起誦(戒)，就生活安樂」。

for a united Community, on courteous terms, without dispute, with a common recitation, dwells in peace.”

Evañca sā bhikkhunī bhikkhunīhi vuccamānā tath’eva paggaṇheyya,  
 如此 和 這 比丘尼 比丘尼 勸告 如此 仍 努力  
 evam +ca ta bhikkhunī bhikkhunī vuccati tathā + eva pa+ganhāti  
 adv.conj. f.s.Nom. f.s.Nom. f.p.Ins. ppr.(f.s.Nom.) adv. 3s.opt.

該比丘尼被諸比丘尼這樣勸告時，仍然那樣堅持，

sā bhikkhunī bhikkhunīhi yāvatatiyām samanubhāsitabbā tassa patinissaggāya.  
 這 比丘尼 比丘尼 直到 第三 勸告 它 放棄  
 ta bhikkhunī bhikkhunī yāva + tatiyām samanubhāsatī ta patinissajjati  
 f.s.Nom. f.s.Nom. f.p.Ins. adv. grd.(f.s.Nom.) m.s.Gen. m.s.Dat.

諸比丘尼應該乃至三次勸告該比丘尼放棄它。

And should that bhikkhunī, thus admonished by the bhikkhunīs, persist as before, the

bhikkhunīs are to rebuke her up to three times so as to desist.

Yāvatatiyañ’ce samanubhāsiyamānā tam paṭinissajjeyya, icc’etam kusalaṁ. No ce paṭinissajjeyya,  
 直到 第三 如果 勸告 它 放棄 如是 那 善 不 如果 放棄  
 yāva+tatiyañ + ce samanubhāsati ta paṭinissajjati iti+ eta kusala no ce paṭinissajjati  
 adv. conj. ppr.(f.s.Nom.) m.s.Acc. 3s.opt. n.s.Nom. n.s.Nom. adv. conj. 3s.opt.

**如果到了第三次被勸告時，(她)放棄它，那就好。如果不放棄，**

If while being rebuked up to three times she desists, that is good. If she does not desist,

ayampi bhikkhunī yāvatatiyakam dhammam āpannā nissāraṇīyam saṅghādisesam  
 這也 比丘尼 直到 第三 法 犯 逐出 僧殘  
 ayam+pi bhikkhunī yāva+tatiyaka dhamma āpannā nissāraṇīyam saṅghādisesa  
 f.s.Nom. f.s.Nom. adv. m.s.Acc. pp.(f.s.Acc.) grd.(f.s.Acc.) adj.(f.s.Acc.)

**直到第三次，那麼，該比丘尼犯應逐出的僧殘法。**

then this bhikkhunī, also, as soon as she has fallen into the third act of offence, is to be (temporarily) driven out, and it entails initial and subsequent meetings of the Community.

## 15.Bhedānuvattakasikkhāpadam 與分裂僧團的比丘同黨(=Bhikkhu Saṅghādiseso11)

15.Tass’eva kho pana bhikkhuniyā bhikkhuniyo honti anuvattakā vaggavādakā, eko vā  
 她 強調詞 又 比丘尼 比丘尼 是 追隨 別眾 說 一 或  
 tassā+ eva kho pana bhikkhu bhikkhu < hū anuvattati vagga+vādakā eka vā  
 f.s.Gen. ind. adv. f.s.Gen. f.p.Nom. f.p.Nom. 3p.pr. m.p.Nom. f.p.Nom. m.s.Nom. conj.

**十五、若比丘尼有一個、兩個、或三個比丘尼追隨者，站在她那邊講話，**

15. Should bhikkhunīs — one, two, or three — who are followers and partisans of that bhikkhunī,

dve vā tayo vā, te evam vadeyyum, “Māyyāyo, etam bhikkhuniṁ kiñci avacutta,  
 二 或 三 或 她 如此 說 不要 大姐 這個 比丘尼 任何 說  
 dvi vā ti vā ta evam vadati mā āyasmant eta bhikkhuni kiñci vatti  
 m.p.Nom. conj. f.p.Nom.adv. 3p.opt. adv. f.p.Nom. f.s.Acc. f.s.Acc. n.s.Acc.ind. 2p.aor.

**如果她們這樣說：「諸大姐！不要說這位比丘尼的任何事情。**

say, ‘Do not, ladies, admonish that bhikkhunī in any way.

dhammavādī c’esā bhikkhunī, vinayavādī c’esā bhikkhunī, amhākañc’esā bhikkhunī  
 法 主張 和這個 比丘尼 律 主張 和這個 比丘尼 我 和這個 比丘尼  
 dhamma+vādin ca+esa bhikkhuñi vinaya+vādin ca+esa bhikkhuñi amhākañ+ca+ esā bhikkhuñi  
 m.s.Nom. f.s.Nom. f.s.Nom. m. m.s.Nom. f.s.Nom. f.s.Nom. m.p.Gen. f.s.Nom. f.s.Nom.

**這位比丘尼是講法的人，這位比丘尼是講戒律的人，而且這位比丘尼**

She is an exponent of the Dhamma, she is an exponent of the Vinaya. She acts

chandañca ruciñca ādāya voharati, jānāti no bhāsatī, amhākamp’etam khamatī’ti.  
 需要 和 喜好 和 取 說 知道 我們 說 我 也 這個 適合  
 chanda +ca ruci + ca ādati voharati jānāti aham bhāstai amhākam + pi + eta khamati + iti  
 m.s.Acc.conj. m.s.Acc.conj. ger. 3s.pr. 3s.pr. m.p.Gen. 3s.pr. m.p.Gen. ind. m.s.Nom. 3s.pr. ind.

選取我們的需求和喜好來說，知道我們(的需要)而說，那是適合我們的。」  
with our consent and approval. She knows, she speaks for us, and that is pleasing to us,"

tā bhikkhuniyo bhikkhunīhi evam assu vacanīyā, "Māyyāyo, evam avacuttha.  
這 比丘尼 比丘尼 如此 是 勸告 不要 大姐 如此 說  
ta bhikkhunī bhikkhunī evam atthi vacanīya mā evam vatti  
f.p.Nom. f.p.Nom. f.p.Ins. adv. 3p.opt. grd.(f.p.Nom.) adv. f.p.Nom. adv. 2p.aor.

該比丘尼應該被諸比丘尼這樣勸告：「讓諸大姐不要那樣說，  
the bhikkhunīs are to admonish them thus: "Do not say that, ladies.

Na c'esā bhikkhunī dhammavādī, na c'esā bhikkhunī vinayavādī.  
不 和 這 比丘尼 法 主張 不 和 這 比丘尼 律 主張  
na ca+ esā bhikkhunī dhamma+vādin na ca + esā bhikkhunī vinaya+vādin  
adv. f.s.Nom. f.s.Nom. m. m.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom. f.s.Nom. m. m.s.Nom.

這位比丘尼不是講法的人，這位比丘尼不是講律的人。

That bhikkhunī is not an exponent of the Dhamma and she is not an exponent of the Vinaya.

Māyyānam'pi saṅghabhedo ruccittha, samet'āyyānam saṅghena,  
不要 大姐 也 僧團 破壞 賛成 和合 大姐 僧團  
mā api saṅgha+ bheda rucciati sameti saṅgha  
adv. f.p.Gen. ind. m. m.s.Nom. 2p.aor. 3s.imp. f.p.Gen. m.s.Ins.

諸大姐不要贊成破壞僧團□。請諸大姐□與僧團和合，  
Do not, ladies, approve of a schism in the Community.

samaggo hi saṅgho sammodamāno avivadāmāno ekuddeso phāsu viharati'ti.  
和諧 因為 僧團 喜悅 無 詮 一 詠 安樂 生活  
samagga hi saṅgha sammodati a+vivadati eka+uddesa phāsu viharati+iti  
m.s.Nom. conj. m.s.Nom. ppr.(m.s.Nom.) ppr.(m.s.Nom.) m.s.Nom. m.s.Nom. 3s.pr. ind.

因為和合的僧團歡喜、無諮地一起誦戒□，就生活安樂」。」

Let the ladies' (minds) be reconciled with the Community, for a united Community, on courteous terms, without dispute, with a common recitation, dwells in peace."

Evañca tā bhikkhuniyo bhikkhunīhi vuccamānā tath'eva paggañheyum,  
如此 和 這 比丘尼 比丘尼 勸告 如此 仍 努力  
evam +ca ta bhikkhunī bhikkhunī vuccati tathā + eva pa+gañhāti  
adv.conj. f.s.Nom. f.s.Nom. f.p.Ins. ppr.(f.s.Nom.) adv. 3s.opt.

該比丘尼被諸比丘尼這樣勸告時，仍然那樣堅持，  
And should those bhikkhunīs, thus admonished by the bhikkhunīs, persist as before,

tā bhikkhuniyo bhikkhunīhi yāvatatiyam samanubhāsitabbā tassa paṭinissaggāya.  
 這 比丘尼 比丘尼 直到 第三 勸告 它 放棄  
 ta bhikkhunī bhikkhunī yāva + tatiyam samanubhāsatī ta paṭinissajjati  
 f.s.Nom. f.s.Nom. f.p.Ins. adv. grd.(f.s.Nom.) m.s.Gen. m.s.Dat.

諸比丘尼應該乃至三次勸告該比丘尼放棄它。

the bhikkhunīs are to rebuke them up to three times so as to desist.

Yāvatatiyam’ce samanubhāsiyamānā tam paṭinissajjeyyūm. Icc’etam kusalam. No ce paṭinissajjeyyūm,  
 到到 第三 如果 勸告 它 放棄 如是 那 善 不 如果 放棄  
 yāva+tatiyam + ce samanubhāsatī ta paṭinissajjati iti+ eta kusala no ce paṭinissajjati  
 m.s.Acc. conj. ppr.(f.s.Nom.) m.s.Acc. 3s.opt. n.s.Nom. n.s.Nom. adv. conj. 3s.opt.

如果到了第三次被勸告時，(她)放棄它，那就好。如果不放棄，

If while being rebuked up to three times by the bhikkhunīs they desist, that is good. If they do not desist,

imāpi bhikkhuniyo yāvatatiyakam dhammarām āpannā nissāraṇīyam saṅghādisesam.  
 這 也 比丘尼 直到 第三 法 犯 逐出 僧殘  
 ayam+pi bhikkhunī yāva+tatiyaka dhamma āpannā nissāraṇīya saṅghādisesa  
 f.p.Nom. f.p.Nom. m.s.Acc. m.s.Acc. pp.(f.s.Acc.) grd.(f.s.Acc.) adj.(f.s.Acc.)

直到第三次，那麼，該比丘尼犯應逐出的僧殘法。

then these bhikkhunīs, also, as soon as they have fallen into the third act of offence, are to be (temporarily) driven out, and it entails initial and subsequent meetings of the Community.

## 16.Dubbacasikkhāpadam 惡名望(=Bhikkhu Saṅghādiseso 12)

**16.Bhikkhu pan’eva dubbacajātikā hoti, uddesapariyāpannesu sikkhāpadesu bhikkhunīhi**  
 比丘 連接詞 強調詞 難 勸告 特性 有 詩出 包含 學處 比丘尼  
 bhikkhu pana+eva du+vaca+jātika < hū uddesa+paryāpajjati sikkhāpada bhikkhunū  
 m.s.Nom. ind. adj.(f.s.Nom.) 3s.pr. m. pp.(m.p.Loc.) n.p.Loc. f.p.Ins.

十六、有個性不聽話的比丘尼，在包含於誦出的學處內被諸比丘尼依法勸告，

16. In case a bhikkhunī is by nature difficult to admonish — who, when being legitimately admonished by the bhikkhunīs with reference to the training rules included in the (Pātimokkha) recitation,

sahadhammikam vuccamānā attānam avacanīyam karoti, “mā maṁ ayyāyo kiñci  
 伴隨 法 勸告 自己 不 勸告 造成 不要 我 大姐 任何  
 saha+dhammaika vatti attan a+ vatti karoti mā aharān kiñ+ ci  
 m.s.Acc. ppr.(f.s.Nom.) m.s.Acc. grd.(m.s.Acc.) 3s.pr. adv. m.s.Acc. f.p.Nom. n.s.Acc. ind.

她使得自己難以被勸告，(說)：「諸大姐！不要勸我任何

makes herself unadmonishable, (saying,) “Do not, ladies, say anything to me,

avacuttha kalyāṇam vā pāpakaṁ vā, ahampāyyāyo, na kiñci vakkhāmi kalyāṇam  
 不 忠告 好的 或 壞的 或 我 也 大姐 不 任何 勸告 好的  
 a+vatti kalaya vā pāpaka vā aham+ api na kiñ+ci vatti kalaya  
 2p.aor. n.s.Acc. conj. n.s.Acc. conj. m.s.Nom.ind. f.p.Acc. adv. n.s.Acc. 1s.fut. n.s.Acc.

好的或是壞的，我也不會去勸告諸大姐任何好的或是壞的，

good or bad; and I won't say anything to the ladies, good or bad.

vā pāpakaṁ vā, viramathāyyāyo, mama vacanāyā”ti.  
 或 壞的 或 避免 大姐 我 勸告  
 vā pāpaka vā viramatha aham vacanāyā + iti  
 conj. n.s.Acc. conj. 2p.imp. f.p.Nom. m.s.Gen. m.s.Dat. ind.

請諸大姐免勸告我！」

Refrain, ladies, from admonishing me” —

Sā bhikkhunī bhikkhunīhi evam'assa vacanīyā,  
 這 比丘尼 比丘尼 這樣 是 勸  
 sa bhikkhunū bhikkhunī evam' atthi vacanīya  
 f.s.Nom. f.s.Nom. f.p.Ins. adv. 3s.opt. adj.(f.s.Nom.)

該比丘尼應該被諸比丘尼這樣勸告：

the bhikkhunīs are to admonish her thus:

“Māyyā, attānam avacanīyam akāsi, vacanīyameva, ayyā, attānam karotu,  
 不要 大姐 自己 不 勸告 造成 勸告 強調詞 大姐 自己 造成  
 mā attan a + vatti karoti vacanīya eva attan karoti  
 adv. f.s.Nom. m.s.Acc. grd.(m.s.Acc.) 3s.aor. grd.(m.s.Acc.) adv. f.s.Nom. m.s.Acc. 3s.imp.

大姐不要使得自己難以被勸告，請大姐使得自己可被勸告。

“Let the lady not make herself unadmonishable. Let the lady make herself admonishable.

ayyāpi bhikkhuniyo vadatu sahadhammena, bhikkhuniyopi ayyam vakkhanti  
 大姐 也 比丘尼 勸告 俱 法 比丘尼 也 大姐 勸告  
 api bhikkhunī vadati saha + dhamma bhikkhunī +api vadati  
 f.s.Nom. ind. f.p.Acc. 3s.imp. ind. m.s.Ins. f.p.Nom. ind. f.s.Acc. 3p.fut.

請大姐也依法勸告諸比丘尼，諸比丘尼也會依法勸告大姐，

Let the lady admonish the bhikkhunīs in accordance with what is right, and the bhikkhunīs will admonish the lady in accordance with what is right;

sahadhammena, evam samvadḍhā hi tassa Bhagavato parisā  
 俱 法 如此 成長 因為 這個 世尊 團體  
 saha+ dhamma evam <samvadḍhati hi ta Bhagavant parisā  
 prep. m.s.Ins. adv. pp.(f.p.Nom.) conj. m.s.Gen. m.s.Gen. f.s.Nom.

因為世尊的徒眾就那樣成長，

for it is thus that the Blessed One's following is nurtured:

yad'idaṁ aññamaññavacanena aññamaññavuṭṭhāpanenā”ti.  
 那 如此 互相 勸告 互相 導正錯誤  
 ya ima aññam+añña+ vacana aññam+añña+vuṭṭhāpanena< vuṭṭhāpeti + iti  
 m.s.Nom. m.s.Ins. m.s.Ins. ind.

那也靠互相勸告、互相導正錯誤。

through mutual admonition, through mutual rehabilitation.”

Evañca sā bhikkhunī bhikkhunīhi vuccamānā tath'eva paggaṇheyya,  
 如此 和 這 比丘尼 比丘尼 勸告 如此 仍 努力  
 evam +ca ta bhikkhunī bhikkhunī vuccati tathā + eva pa+gaṇhāti  
 adv.conj. f.s.Nom. f.s.Nom. f.p.Ins. ppr.(f.s.Nom.) adv. 3s.opt.

該比丘尼被諸比丘尼這樣勸告時，仍然那樣堅持，

And should that bhikkhunī, thus admonished by the bhikkhunīs, persist as before,

sā bhikkhunī bhikkhunīhi yāvatatiyam samanubhāsitabbā tassa paṭinissaggāya.  
 這 比丘尼 比丘尼 直到 第三 勸告 它 放棄  
 ta bhikkhunī bhikkhunī yāva + tatiyam samanubhāsatī ta paṭinissajjati  
 f.s.Nom. f.s.Nom. f.p.Ins. adv. grd.(f.s.Nom.) m.s.Gen. m.s.Dat.

諸比丘尼應該乃至三次勸告該比丘尼放棄它。

the bhikkhunīs are to rebuke her up to three times so as to desist.

Yāvatatiyāñ'ce samanubhāsiyamānā tam paṭinissajjeyya, icc'etam kusalam. No ce paṭinissajjeyya,  
 直到 第三 如果 勸告 它 放棄 如是 那 善 不 如果 放棄  
 yāva+tatiyam + ce samanubhāsatī ta paṭinissajjati iti+ eta kusala no ce paṭinissajjati  
 adv. conj. ppr.(f.s.Nom.) m.s.Acc. 3s.opt. n.s.Nom. n.s.Nom. adv. conj. 3s.opt.

如果到了第三次被勸告時，(她)放棄它，那就好。如果不放棄，

If while being rebuked up to three times she desists, that is good. If she does not desist,

ayampi bhikkhunī yāvatatiyakam dhammarām āpannā nissāraṇīyām saṅghādisesām  
 這 也 比丘尼 直到 第三 法 犯 逐出 僧殘  
 ayam+pi bhikkhunī yāva+tatiyaka dhamma āpannā nissāraṇīya saṅghādisesa  
 f.s.Nom. f.s.Nom. m.s.Acc. m.s.Acc. pp.(f.s.Acc.) grd.(f.s.Acc.) adj.(f.s.Acc.)

直到第三次，那麼，該比丘尼犯應逐出的僧殘法。

then this bhikkhunī, also, as soon as she has fallen into the third act of offence, is to be (temporarily) driven out, and it entails initial and subsequent meetings of the Community.

## 17.Kuladūsakasikkhāpadam 惡行敗壞在家人(=Bhikkhu Saṅghādiseso 17)

**17.Bhikkhunī pan’eva aññataram gāmarām vā nigamarām vā upanissāya viharati kuladūsikā**  
 比丘尼 連接詞 強調詞 某一 村落 或 城鎮 或 依靠 生活 良家 破壞者  
 bhikkhunī pana+eva aññatara gāma vā nigama vā upanissayati viharati kula+dūsaka  
 f.s.Nom. adv. m.s.Acc. m.s.Acc. conj. m.s.Acc. conj. ger. 3s.pr. n. adj.(f.s.Nom.)

**十七、比丘尼依靠某一個村落或城鎮而生活，(她)是好家庭的破壞者、**

**17. In case a bhikkhunī living in dependence on a certain village or town is a corrupter of families, a woman of depraved conduct —**

pāpasamācārā, tassā kho pāpakā samācārā dissanti c’eva suyyanti ca, kulāni ca tāya  
 壞 行為 她 而 壞 行為 見 既 聽 又 良家 和 她  
 pāpa+samācāra ta kho pāpaka samācāra dassati ca+eva sūnāti ca kula ca ta  
 adj. m.s.Nom. f.s.Gen. adv. m.p.Nom. m.p.Nom. pass.3p.pr. adv. pass.3p.pr. conj. n.p.Nom. conj. f.s.Ins.

**行為不好。而她的壞行為既被看見又被聽見，**

**whose depraved conduct is both seen and heard about,**

dutṭhāni dissanti c’eva suyyanti ca. sā bhikkhunī bhikkhunīhi evamassa vacanīyā,  
 破壞 看見 既 聽 又 這 比丘尼 比丘尼 如此 是 嘆告  
 dussati dassati ca + eva sunāti ca ta bhikkhunī bhikkhunī evam atthi vatti  
 pp.(m.p.Nom.) pass.3p.pr. adv. pass.3p.pr. conj. f.s.Nom. f.s.Nom. f.p.Ins. adv. 3s.opt. grd.(f.s.Nom.)

**且她所破壞的好家庭既被看見又被聽見。該比丘尼應該這樣被諸比丘尼勸告：**

**and the families she has corrupted are both seen and heard about — the bhikkhunīs are to admonish her thus:**

“ayyā, kho kuladūsikā pāpasamācārā, ayyāya kho pāpakā samācārā dissanti  
 大姐 良家 破壞者 壞 實行 大姐 而 壞 行為 見  
 kho kula+dūsaka pāpa+samācāra kho pāpaka samācāra dassati  
 f.s.Nom. adv. n. m.s.Nom. adj. m.s.Nom. f.s.Gen. adv. adj.(m.p.Nom.) m.p.Nom. pass.3p.pr.

**大姐是好家庭的破壞者、行為不好。**

**“You, lady, are a corrupter of families, a woman of depraved conduct.**

c’eva suyyanti ca, kulāni cāyyāya, dutṭhāni dissanti c’eva suyyanti ca.  
 既 聽 又 良家 和 大姐 破壞 看見 既 聽 又  
 ca+eva sunāti ca kula ca dussati dassati ca+eva sunāti ca  
 conj. adv. pass.3p.pr. conj. n.p.Nom. f.s.Ins. pp.(n.p.Nom.) pass.3p.pr. adv. pass.3p.pr. conj.

**而大姐的壞行為既被看見又被聽見，且大姐所破壞的好家庭既被看見又被聽見。**

**Your depraved conduct is both seen and heard about, and the families you have corrupted are both seen and heard about.**

Pakkamat’āyyā imamhā āvāsā, alam te idha vāsenā” ti.  
 離開 大姐 這 地方 足夠 她們(=妳) 這 住  
 pakkamati ima āvāsa alam tvām idha vāsenā< vāsa + iti  
 3s.imp. f.s.Nom. m.s.Abl. m.s.Abl. adv. 2p.Nom. adv. m.s.Ins. ind.

請大姐離開這個地方，妳在這裡住夠了。

Leave this monastery, lady. Enough of your staying here.”

Evañca sā bhikkhunī bhikkhunīhi vuccamānā tā bhikkhuniyo evam vadeyya,  
 如此 和 這 比丘尼 比丘尼 勸告 這 比丘尼 如此 說  
 evam + ca ta bhikkhunī bhikkhunī vatti ta bhikkhunī evam vadati  
 adv. conj. f.s.Nom. f.s.Nom. f.p.Ins. ppr.(f.s.Nom.) f.p.Acc. f.p.Acc. adv. 3s.opt.

當該比丘尼被諸比丘尼那樣勸告時，她這樣地告訴諸比丘尼：

And should that bhikkhunī, thus admonished by the bhikkhunīs, say about the bhikkhunīs,

“chandagāminiyo ca bhikkhuniyo, dosagāminiyo ca bhikkhuniyo, mohagāminiyo ca bhikkhuniyo,  
 貪 引導者 和 比丘尼 瞥 引導者 和 比丘尼 痴 引導者 和 比丘尼  
 chanda+gāmina ca bhikkhunī dosa+gāmina ca bhikkhunī moha + gāmina ca bhikkhunī<sup>1</sup>  
 m. f.p.Nom. conj. f.p.Nom. m. f.p.Nom. conj. f.p.Nom. m. f.p.Nom. conj. f.p.Nom.

「諸比丘尼是被貪欲引導的、被瞋恨引導的、被愚痴引導的、

“The bhikkhunīs are biased through favoritism, biased through aversion, biased through delusion,

bhayagāminiyo ca bhikkhuniyo, tādisikāyā āpattiyā ekaccam pabbājenti,  
 害怕 引導者 和 比丘尼 像如此的 犯戒 某些人 摢出  
 bhaya+gāmina ca bhikkhunī tādisika āpatti ekacca pabbājeti  
 n. f.p.Nom. conj. f.p.Nom. m.s.Ins. f.s.Ins. m.s.Acc. caus.3p.pr.

ekaccam na pabbājenti”ti.

某些人 不 摢出  
 ekacca na pabbājeti+ iti  
 m.s.Acc. adv. caus.3p.pr. ind.

且被害怕引導的。因為犯了像這樣的戒，趕走某些人，不趕走某些人」。

biased through fear, in that for this sort of offense they banish some and do not banish others,”

Sā bhikkhunī bhikkhunī hi evam assa vacanīyā, “Māyyā evam avaca,  
 這 比丘尼 比丘尼 如此 是 勸告 不要 大姐 如此 說  
 ta bhikkhunī bhikkhunī evam atthi vatti mā evam vatti  
 f.s.Nom. f.s.Nom. f.p.Ins. adv. 3s.opt. grd.(f.s.Nom.) adv. f.s.Nom. adv. 3s.aor.

該比丘尼應該被諸比丘尼這樣勸告：「大姐不要那樣說，

the bhikkhunīs are to admonish her thus: “Do not say that, lady.

na ca bhikkhuniyo chandagāminiyo, na ca bhikkhuniyo dosagāminiyo  
 不 和 比丘尼 貪 引導者 不 和 比丘尼 瞥 引導者  
 na ca bhikkhunī chanda+gāmina na ca bhikkhunī dosa+gāmina  
 adv. conj. f.p.Nom. m. f.p.Nom. adv. conj. f.p.Nom. m. f.p.Nom.

諸比丘尼不是被貪欲引導的、不是被瞋恨引導的、

The bhikkhunīs are not biased through favoritism, are not biased through aversion,

na ca bhikkhuniyo mohagāminiyo, na ca bhikkhuniyo bhayagāminiyo.

不 和 比丘尼 痴 引導者	不 和 比丘尼 害怕 引導者
na ca bhikkhunī moha+ gāmina	na ca bhikkhunī bhaya+ gāmina
adv. conj. f.p.Nom. m.	adv. conj. f.p.Nom. n.

不是被愚痴引導的、且不是被害怕引導的。

are not biased through delusion, are not biased through fear.

Āyyā kho kuladūsakā pāpasamācārā,  
大姐 而 良家 破壞者 壞 行為  
kho kula + dūsaka pāpa+samācāra  
f.s.Nom. adv. n. f.s.Nom. adj. f.s.Nom.

大姐是好家庭的破壞者、行為不好，

You, lady, are a corrupter of families, a woman of depraved conduct.

ayyāya kho pāpakā samācārā dissanti c'eva suyyanti ca,  
大姐 而 壞 行為 見 和 還 聽 和  
kho pāpaka samācāra dassati ca + eva sūñāti ca  
f.s.Gen. adv. m.p.Nom. m.p.Nom. pass.3p.pr. conj. adv. pass.3p.pr. conj.

而大姐的壞行為既被看見又被聽見，

Your depraved conduct is both seen and heard about,

kulāni c'āyyāya dutṭhāni dissanti c'eva suyyanti ca.  
良家 和 大姐 破壞 看見 和 還 聽 和  
kula ca dussati dassati ca + eva sūñāti ca  
n.p.Nom. f.s.Ins. pp.(n.p.Nom.) pass.3p.pr. adv. pass.3p.pr. conj.

且大姐所破壞的好家庭既被看見又被聽見。

and the families you have corrupted are both seen and heard about.

Pakkamat'āyyā, imamhā āvāsā, alam te idha vāsenā"ti.  
離開 大姐 這 地方 足夠 她們(=妳) 這 住  
pakkamati ima āvāsa alam tvarām idha vāsena + iti  
3s.imp. f.s.Nom. m.s.Abl. m.s.Abl. ind. 2p.Nom. adv. m.s.Ins. ind.

請大姐離開這個地方，妳住在這裡夠(久)了。

Leave this monastery, lady. Enough of your staying here."

Evañca sā bhikkhunī bhikkhunīhi vuccamānā tath'eva paggañheyya,  
如此 和 這 比丘尼 比丘尼hi 勸告 如此 仍 努力  
evam +ca ta bhikkhunī bhikkhunī vuccati tathā + eva pa+ganhāti

adv.conj. f.s.Nom. f.s.Nom. f.p.Ins. ppr.(f.s.Nom.) adv. 3s.opt.

該比丘尼被諸比丘尼這樣勸告時，仍然那樣堅持，

And should that bhikkhunī, thus admonished by the bhikkhunīs, persist as before,

sā	bhikkhunī	bhikkhunīhi	yāvatatiyam	samanubhāsitabbā	tassa	paṭinissaggāya.	
這	比丘尼	比丘尼	直到	第三	勸告	它	放棄
ta	bhikkhunī	bhikkhunī	yāva + tatiyam	samanubhāsatī	ta	paṭinissajjati	
f.s.Nom.	f.s.Nom.	f.p.Ins.		adv.	grd.(f.s.Nom.)	m.s.Gen.	m.s.Dat.

諸比丘尼應該乃至三次勸告該比丘尼放棄它。

the bhikkhunīs are to rebuke her up to three times so as to desist.

Yāvatatiyāñ'ce	samanubhāsiyamāñā	tāñ paṭinissajjeyya,	icc'etāñ kusalañ.	No ce	paṭinissajjeyya,
直到	第三	如果	勸告	她	放棄
yāva+tatiyāñ + ce	samanubhāsatī	ta	paṭinissajjati	iti+ eta	kusala
adv. conj.	ppr.(f.s.Nom.)	f.s.Acc.	3s.opt.	n.s.Nom.	n.s.Nom.
				no ce	paṭinissajjati
				adv. conj.	3s.opt.

如果到了第三次被勸告時，(她)放棄它，那就好。如果不放棄，

If while being rebuked up to three times she desists, that is good. If she does not desist,

ayampi	bhikkhunī	yāvatatiyakam	dhammam	āpannā	nissāraṇīyam	saṅghādisesam
這也	比丘尼	直到	第三	法	犯	逐出
ayam+pi	bhikkhunī	yāva+tatiyaka	dhamma	āpannā	nissāraṇīya	saṅghādisesa
f.s.Nom.	f.s.Nom.	m.s.Acc.	m.s.Acc.	p pp.(f.s.Acc.)	grd.(f.s.Acc.)	adj.(f.s.Acc.)

直到第三次，那麼，該比丘尼犯應逐出的僧殘法。

then this bhikkhunī, also, as soon as she has fallen into the third act of offence, is to be (temporarily) driven out, and it entails initial and subsequent meetings of the Community.

Udditthā	kho	ayyāyo	sattarasa	saṅghādisesā	dhammā	nava	paṭhamāpattikā,	aṭṭha	yāvatatiyakā,
誦	諸大姐	十七	僧殘	規則	九	初次	犯	八	達到
uddisati	kho	sattarasa	saṅghādisesa	dhamma	paṭhama+āpattika		āpatti	yāva+tatiyakā	第三
pp.(m.p.Nom.)	adv.	f.p.Voc.	m.p.Nom.	m.p.Nom.	m.p.Nom.	m.p.Nom.	m.p.Nom.	m.p.Nom.	m.p.Nom.

諸大姐！十七僧殘的規則已經誦出了。九條戒□是初次即犯，八(條戒)是到了第三次(羯磨才犯)。

The ladies, the Seventeen Rules entailing Initial and Subsequent Meeting of the Saṅgha have been recited, nine being established at once upon being āpatti and eight upon the third (remostration),

Yesam	bhikkhunī	<u>aññataram</u>	vā	aññataram	vā	āpajjati,
任何	比丘尼	隨一				犯、進入
ya	bhikkhunī	aññatara	aññatara	aññatara	aññatara	āpajjati
f.p.Gen.	f.s.Nom.	m.s.Acc.	m.s.Acc.	m.s.Acc.	m.s.Acc.	3s.pr.

若比丘尼犯了其中的任一條，

in any one of which if a bhikkhunī admits to be at fault,

tāya bhikkhuniyā ubhatosaṅghe pakkhamānattam caritabbam.

這	比丘尼	二部	僧團	半月	摩那埵	應行
ta	bhikkhunī	ubhato + saṅgha	pakkha+mānatta		caritabba	
f.s.Ins.	f.s.Ins.	grd.(m.s.Nom.)	m.	m.s.Acc.	grd.(m.s.Nom.)	

這比丘尼應行履行二部僧團的半月摩那埵，

she must live on probation with no choice in the matter for as many days as she knowingly concealed (the fault). When the bhikkhunī has finished the probation she must undertake from both Communities in addition the half-month penance for bhikkhunīs.

Ciṇṇamānattā bhikkhunī yattha siyā vīsatigaṇo bhikkhunisaṅgho,

舉行	摩那埵、復權	比丘尼	那裡	有	二十	眾	比丘尼	僧團
ciṇṇa (< carati pp.)+mānatta	bhikkhunī	yattha	atthi	vīsatī+gaṇa	bhikkhunī+saṅgha			
f.s.Nom.	f.s.Nom.	adv.	3s.opt.	m.s.Nom.	f.	m.s.Nom.		

舉行復權的比丘尼，在那裡應有二十位比丘尼的僧團，

When the bhikkhunī has completed the penance she must be reinstated where is there a Saṅgha of bhikkhunīs comprising a chapter of twenty.

tattha sā bhikkhunī abbhetabbā. Ekāyapi ce ūno vīsatigaṇo bhikkhunisaṅgho

這裡	這	比丘尼	應出罪	一	也	如果	不足	二十	眾	比丘尼	僧團
tattha	ta	bhikkhunī	abbheti	ekena+	api	ce	ūna	vīsatī+gaṇa	bhikkhunī+saṅgha		
adv. f.s.Nom.	f.s.Nom.	grd.(f.s.Nom.)	f.s.Ins.	ind. conj.	m.s.Nom.		m.s.Nom.	f.	m.s.Nom.		

即使只差一位，不足二十位的比丘尼僧團，

If a Saṅgha of bhikkhunīs comprising a chapter of even one less than twenty

tam bhikkhuniṁ abbheyya, sā ca bhikkhunī anabbhitā,

這	比丘尼	出罪	這	和	比丘尼	不	出罪
ta	bhikkhunī	abbheti	ta	ca	bhikkhunī	an+abbeti	
f.s.Acc.	f.s.Acc.	3s.opt.	f.s.Nom.	conj.	f.s.Nom.	adj.(m.s.Nom.)	

為這位比丘尼出罪的話，這位比丘尼未出罪，

should (proceed to) reinstate that bhikkhunī then that bhikkhunī is not reinstated,

tā ca bhikkhuniyo gārayhā, Ayam tattha sāmīci.

這些	和	諸比丘尼	應呵責	這	在這裡	正確的
ta	ca	bhikkhunī	garahati	ima	tattha	sāmīcī
f.p.Nom.	conj.	grd.(m.p.Nom.)		f.s.Nom.	adv.	f.s.Nom.

而且這些比丘尼應該被呵責。在這裡這是正確的(過程)。

and those bhikkhunīs are censurable. This is the proper course here.

Tatth'āyyāyo pucchāmi: Kacci'ttha parisuddhā?  
 這裡 大姐 我問 是否 於此 清淨  
 tattha pucchati kacci ettha pp. of parisujjhati  
 adv. f.p.Acc. 1s.pr. ind. adv. m.p.Nom.

**在這裡我問諸大姐：「妳們於此(類戒)是否清淨？」**

Herein I ask the ladies : Are you pure in this?

Dutiyam'pi pucchāmi: Kacci'ttha parisuddhā?  
 第二 也 問 是否 於此 清淨  
 dutiyam+ api pucchati kacci ettha pp. of parisujjhati  
 m.s.Acc. ind. 1s.pr. ind. adv. m.p.Nom.

**第二次我再問：「妳們於此(類戒)是否清淨？」**

For the second times I ask the ladies : Are you pure in this?

Tatiyam'pi pucchāmi: Kacci'ttha parisuddhā?  
 第三 也 問 是否 於此 清淨  
 tatiyam + api pucchati kacci ettha pp. of parisujjhati  
 m.s.Acc. ind. 1s.pr. ind. adv. m.p.Nom.

**第三次我再問：「妳們於此(類戒)是否清淨？」**

For the third times I ask the ladies : Are you pure in this?

Parisuddh'etth'āyyāyo, tasmā tunhī, evam etam dhārayāmīti.  
 清淨 在此 大姐 因此 沈默 如此 這 認為  
 parisuddha ettha ta tunhi evam eta dharati  
 m.p.Nom. adv. f.p.Nom. m.s.Abl. adv. m.s.Acc. 1s.pr.

**諸大姐於此(類戒)是清淨的，所以默然。我如此認定這件事。**

The ladies are pure herein; that is why they are silent. So do I record it.

~Saṅghādiseso niṭṭhito.~

## Nissaggiyapācittiyā 捨餚戒

Ime kho panāyyāyo timsa nissaggiyā pācittiyā dhammā uddesam āgacchanti.  
 這裡 又 大姐 三十 捨 餚 規則 詩 聞  
 ima kho pana nissaggiya pācittiya dhamma uddesati āgacchati  
 m.p.Nom. adv. f.p.Voc. adj.(m.p.Nom.) m.p.Nom. m.p.Nom. m.s.Acc. 3p.pr.

**諸大姐！現在到了誦出這三十捨餚戒。**

Now, the ladies, the Thirty Rules entailing Expiation with Forfeiture come up for recitation.

## Pattavaggopāṭhamo 鉢品第一

### \*1.Pattasannicayasikkhāpadam 團積鉢

**1. Yā pana bhikkhunī pattasannicayam kareyya, nissaggiyam pācittiyam.**

任何	比丘尼	鉢	團積	做	捨懶、尼薩耆	犯懶悔、波逸提
yā	pana	bhikkhunī	patta + sannicaya	karoti	nissaggiya	paccittiya
f.s.Nom.adv.	f.s.Nom.	n.	m.s.Nom.	3s.opt.	adj.(f.s.Nom.)	adj.(f.s.Nom.)

#### 一、若比丘尼，團積鉢者，犯捨懶。<sup>1</sup>

1. Should any bhikkhunī make a bowl-hoard (have more than one bowl in her possession), it is to be forfeited and confessed.

### \*2.Akālacīvarabhājanasikkhāpadam 以非時衣(為時衣而)分配

**2.Yā pana bhikkhunī akālacīvaraṁ “kālacīvaran”ti adhiṭṭhahitvā bhājāpeyya,**

任何	比丘尼	非 時 衣	時 衣	執持	分配
yā	pana	bhikkhunī	a+ kāla+cīvara	kāla+cīvara	adhiṭṭhahati <bhājeti
f.s.Nom.adv.	f.s.Nom.	m.	n.s.Nom.	m. n.s.Nom.	ger. caus.(3s.opt.)

nissaggiyam pācittiyam.

捨	懶
nissaggiya	pācittiya
adj.(f.s.Nom.)	adj.(f.s.Nom.)

#### 二、若比丘尼，執持非時衣，分配為時衣者，犯捨懶。<sup>2</sup>

2. Should any bhikkhunī, having determined an out-of-season cloth to be an in-season cloth, distribute it, it is to be forfeited and confessed.

### \*3.Cīvaraparivattanasikkhāpadam 交換衣(之後奪回)

**3.Yā pana bhikkhunī bhikkhuniyā saddhim cīvaram parivattetvā sā pacchā evam vadeyya--**

任何	比丘尼	比丘尼	和	衣	交換	她	以後	如是	說
ya	pana	bhikkhunī	bhikkhunī	saddhim	cīvara	parivatti	ta	pacchā	evam <vatadi
f.s.Nom.	adv.	f.s.Nom.	f.s.Ins.	adv.	n.	ger.	f.s.Nom.	adv.	3s.opt.

#### 三、若比丘尼，與(其他)比丘尼交換衣，之後她這樣說：

3. Should any bhikkhunī, having exchanged robe-cloth with another bhikkhunī, later say to her,

“handāyye, tuyham cīvaram, āhara metam cīvaram, yam tuyham tuyhamevetam,  
喂 大姐姊 衣 紿 我 彼 衣 那 嫂 嫂 正是 彼  
handā+ ayye tuyham cīvara āhara me + tam cīvara yam tuyham tuyham + eva + tam  
f.s.Voc. s.Gen. n.s.Acc. 2s.imp. s.Gen. n.s.Acc. n.s.Nom. s.Gen. s.Gen. n.s.Acc.

<sup>1</sup> Pāci.IV,245(CS:pg.320)：「不犯：於黎明前受持、說淨、損壞、失掉、打破、燒毀、被搶走而取回者，以親厚想取，癡狂者，最初之犯行者。」

<sup>2</sup> Pāci.IV,246(CS:pg.322)：「不犯：分配非時衣為時衣想，分配時衣為時衣，癡狂者，最初之犯行者。」

「喂！大姐！妳的衣，還衣給我。妳的衣是妳的，

“Here, lady. This is your robe-cloth. Bring me that robe-cloth of mine.

yam mayham mayhamevetam, āhara metam cīvaraṁ, sakam paccāharā”ti  
 那 我 我 正是 彼 帶來 我的 彼 衣 自己 拿回去  
 yam aham mayham+eva+tam āharati me+tam cīvara sakam paccāhara  
 n.s.Nom. s.Gen. s.Gen. n.s.Acc. 3s.opt. s.Gen.n.s.Acc. m.s.Nom. adj. 2s.imp.

我的衣是我的。我的衣拿來，(妳)自己的拿去！」

What was yours is still yours. What was mine is still mine. Bring me that one of mine.  
 Take yours back,”

acchindeyya vā acchindāpeyya vā, nissaggiyam pācittiyan.  
 搶奪 或 搶奪 或 捨 懈  
 acchindati acchindati nissaggiya pācittiya  
 grd. grd.caus. m.s.Nom. m.s.Nom.

而搶奪或使人搶奪者，犯捨懥。<sup>1</sup>

and then snatch it back or have it snatched back, it is to be forfeited and confessed.

#### \*4.Aññaviññāpanasikkhāpadam 索求(更索求)

4.Yā pana bhikkhunī aññam viññāpetvā aññam viññāpeyya, nissaggiyam pācittiyan.  
 任何 比丘尼 另外的 乞討 另外的 乞討 捨 懈  
 ya pana bhikkhunī aññam viññātī aññam viññāpeyya nissaggiya pācittiya  
 f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom. adj. ger. adj. caus.3s.opt. adj.(f.s.Nom.) adj.(f.s.Nom.)

四、若比丘尼，先索求某物，後索求別的，犯捨懥。<sup>2</sup>

4. Should any bhikkhunī, having had one thing requested, (then send it back and) have another thing requested, it is to be forfeited and confessed.

#### \*5.Aññacetāpanasikkhāpadam 購某物(後換購某物)

5.Yā pana bhikkhunī aññam cetāpetvā aññam cetāpeyya, nissaggiyam pācittiyan.  
 任何 比丘尼 另外的 等值、購 另外的 等值、購 捨 懈  
 ya pana bhikkhunī aññam cetāpeti aññam cetāpeti nissaggiya pācittiya  
 f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom. adj. ger. adj. 3s.opt. adj.(f.s.Nom.) adj.(f.s.Nom.)

五、若比丘尼，先交易某物，後換別的，犯捨懥。

5. Should any bhikkhunī, having had one thing bought, (then send it back and) have

<sup>1</sup> Pāci.IV,246(CS:pg.322)：「不犯：該尼施與，或該尼之親友取之，癡狂者，最初之犯行者。」

<sup>2</sup> 《四分比丘尼戒本》(T22.1034.2)：「若比丘尼欲索是，更索彼者，尼薩耆波逸提。」

Pāci.IV,249(CS:pg.325)：「不犯：乞此物(不足)又乞(可成一套之)他物，乞他物有利得，癡狂者，最初之犯行者。」

another thing bought, it is to be forfeited and confessed.

### \*6.Paṭhamasaṅghikacetāpanasikkhāpadam 僧伽購某物(1)

**6.Yā pana bhikkhunī aññadatthikena parikkhārena aññuddisikena saṅghikena aññam cetāpeyya,**  
 任何 比丘尼 另外的、某 資財 他物 某 指定、分配 僧伽 某(=他物) 等值、購  
 ya pana bhikkhunī añña + datthika parikkhāra añña + uddisika saṅghika aññam cetāpeti  
 f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom. adj.(s.Ins.) s.Ins. s.Ins. s.Ins. m.n.Acc. 3s.opt.

nissaggiyam pācittiyam.

捨 餓  
 nissagga+iya pā+citta+ika  
 adj.(f.s.Nom.) adj.(f.s.Nom.)

**六、若比丘尼，使用已為僧團指定交易某物的某資財，卻改交易他物者，犯捨餓。<sup>1</sup>**

6. Should any bhikkhunī, using a fund intended for one purpose, dedicated to one purpose for a Community, have something else bought, it is to be forfeited and confessed.

### \*7.Dutiyasaṅghikacetāpanasikkhāpadam 僧伽購某物(2)

**7.Yā pana bhikkhunī aññadatthikena parikkhārena aññuddisikena saṅghikena saññācikena**  
 任何 比丘尼 某 資財 他物 某 指定 僧伽 自己乞求  
 ya pana bhikkhunī añña+ datthika parikkhāra añña + uddisika saṅghika saññācika  
 f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom. adj.(s.Ins.) s.Ins. s.Ins. s.Ins. s.Ins.

aññam cetāpeyya, nissaggiyam pācittiyam.

某(=他物) 交易、購 捨 餓  
 aññam cetāpeti nissaggiya pācittiya  
 m.n.Acc. 3s.opt. adj.(f.s.Nom.) adj.(f.s.Nom.)

**七、若比丘尼，使用已為僧團指定交易某物的某資財，自己乞求交易他物者，犯捨餓。**

7. Should any bhikkhunī, having herself asked for a fund intended for one purpose, dedicated to one purpose for a Community, use it to have something else bought, it is to be forfeited and confessed.

### \*8.Paṭhamagaṇikacetāpanasikkhāpadam 大眾購某物(1)

**8.Yā pana bhikkhunī aññadatthikena parikkhārena aññuddisikena mahājanikena**  
 任何 比丘尼 另外的、某 資財 他物 某 指定 大眾  
 ya pana bhikkhunī añña + datthika parikkhāra añña + uddisika mahājanika  
 f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom. adj.(s.Ins.) s.Ins. s.Ins. m.s.Ins.

aññam cetāpeyya, nissaggiyam pācittiyam.

某(=他物) 交易、購 捨 餓  
 aññam cetāpeti nissaggiya pācittaika  
 m.n.Acc. 3s.opt. adj.(f.s.Nom.) adj.(f.s.Nom.)

<sup>1</sup> Pāci.IV,251(CS:pg.328)：「不犯：(購此)所餘用以購他物，問施主而轉用，事故時，癡狂者，最初之犯行者。」

## 八、若比丘尼，使用已為大眾指定交易某物的某資財，卻交易他物者，犯捨餒。

8. Should any bhikkhunī, using a fund intended for one purpose, dedicated to one purpose for a group, have something else bought, it is to be forfeited and confessed.

### \*9.Dutiyagaṇikacetāpanasikkhāpadam 大眾購某物(2)

9. Yā pana bhikkhunī aññadatthikena parikkhārena aññuddisikena mahājanikena  
 任何 比丘尼 某 資財 他物 某 指定 大眾  
 ya pana bhikkhunī añña+datthika parikkhāra añña + uddisika mahājanika  
 f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom. adj.(s.Ins.) s.Ins. s.Ins. m.s.Ins.

saññācikena añnam cetāpeyya, nissaggiyam pācittiyam.  
 自己乞求 某(=他物) 交易、購 捨 餒  
 saññācika añnam cetāpeti nissaggaiya pācittaika  
 s.Ins. m.n.Acc. 3s.opt. adj.(f.s.Nom.) adj.(f.s.Nom.)

## 九、若比丘尼，使用已為大眾指定交易某物的某資財，自己乞求交易他物者，犯捨餒。

9. Should any bhikkhunī, having herself asked for a fund intended for one purpose, dedicated to one purpose for a group, use it to have something else bought, it is to be forfeited and confessed.

### \*10.Puggalikacetāpanasikkhāpadam 個人購某物(1)

10.Yā pana bhikkhunī aññadatthikena parikkhārena aññuddisikena puggalikena saññācikena  
 任何 比丘尼 某 資財 他物 某 指定 個人 自己乞求  
 ya pana bhikkhunī añña+datthika parikkhāra añña + uddisika puggalika saññācika  
 f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom. adj.(s.Ins.) s.Ins. s.Ins. s.Ins.

añnam cetāpeyya, nissaggiyam pācittiyam.  
 某(=他物) 交易、購 捨 餒  
 añna cetāpeti nissaggaiya pācittaika  
 m.n.Acc. 3s.opt. adj.(f.s.Nom.) adj.(f.s.Nom.)

## 一〇、若比丘尼，使用已為個人指定交易某物的某資財，自己乞求交易他物者，犯捨餒。

10. Should any bhikkhunī, having herself asked for a fund intended for one purpose, dedicated to one purpose for an individual, use it to have something else bought, it is to be forfeited and confessed.

~Pattavaggo pathamo.~

## Cīvaravaggodutiyo 衣品第二

### \*11. Garupāvuraṇasikkhāpadam 求重衣者(最高可值四個「康沙」)

**11. Garupāvuraṇam<sup>1</sup>** pana bhikkhuniyā cetāpentiyā<sup>2</sup> catukkarṇsaparamarṇ cetāpetabbam.<sup>3</sup>

重 寬大外衣 garu+ pāvuraṇa	比丘尼 bhikkhunī	乞求、告知 viññāpenta	四個 銅幣、康沙 最高 catu + karṇsa + parama	等值 cetāpeti
adj. n.s.Nom.	adv.	f.s.Ins.	pp.(f.s.Ins.)	adj.(n.s.Acc.)
				grd.(n.s.Acc.)

Tato ce uttari	cetāpeyya,	nissaggyam pācittiyam.
此 如果 超過	等值	捨 懈
ta ce uttari	cetāpeti	nissaggaiya pācittaika
n.s.Abl. conj. adv.	3s.opt.	adj.(f.s.Nom.) adj.(f.s.Nom.)

**十一、若比丘尼乞求重衣者，最高可求值四個「康沙」，若過此等值，犯捨懺。**

11. When a bhikkhunī is asking for a heavy cloth, one worth four “bronzes” at most may be asked for. If she asks for more than that, it is to be forfeited and confessed.

### \*12. Lahupāvuraṇasikkhāpadam 求輕衣者(最高可值兩個半「康沙」)

**12. Lahupāvuraṇam** pana bhikkhuniyā cetāpentiyā adḍhateyyakarṇsaparamarṇ cetāpetabbam.

輕 寬大外衣 lahu+ pāvuraṇa	比丘尼 bhikkhunī	乞求、告知 viññāpenta	三個減半 銅幣 最高 adḍhateyya+karṇsa + parama	等值 cetāpeti
adj. n.s.Nom.	adv.	f.s.Ins.	pp.(f.s.Ins.)	adj.(n.s.Acc.)
				grd.(n.s.Acc.)

Tato ce uttari	cetāpeyya, nissaggyam pācittiyam.
此 如果 超過	等值 捨 懈
ta ce uttari	cetāpeti nissaggaiya pācittaika
n.s.Abl. conj. adv.	3s.opt. adj.(f.s.Nom.) adj.(f.s.Nom.)

**十二、若比丘尼乞求輕衣者，最高可求值兩個半「康沙」，若過此等值，犯捨懺。**

12. When a bhikkhunī is asking for a light cloth, one worth two and a half “bronzes” at most may be asked for. If she asks for more than that, it is to be forfeited and confessed.

### 13. Kathinasikkhāpadam 迦提那(捨後，額外的布最多可存十天) (=Bhikkhu NP 1)

**4** 13. Niṭṭhitacīvaraśmī bhikkhuniyā ubbhataśmī kathine dasāhaparamaṁ atirekacīvaraṁ

完備 衣服 niṭṭhita< niṭṭhāti+cīvara	比丘尼 bhikkhunī	捨，除去 ubbhata < uddharati	迦提那、嘎廷 kathina	十 日 最高 dasa+aha+parama	額外的 布 atireka + cīvara
pp.	n.s.Loc.	f.s.Ins.	pp.(m.s.Loc.)	m.s.Loc.	n.s.Acc. adj. n.s.Nom.

**十三、當比丘尼備妥了衣服、已經捨去迦提那(雨安居功德衣的特許)時，**

<sup>1</sup> Pāci.IV,255(CS:pg.336)：「重衣：凡是在寒天用的寬大外衣。」

<sup>2</sup> Pāci.IV,255(CS:pg.336)：「乞求：告知，教。」

<sup>3</sup> Pāci.IV,256(CS:pg.336)：「最高可求值四個「康沙」之值：值十六個迦利沙鉢拿。」(迦利沙鉢拿：硬幣，大約值 12 pence(便士)的英國舊幣。1971 年未進行幣值十進位之前，一英鎊等於 20 先令，而 1 先令又等於 12 便士。換言之，一英鎊等於 240 便士。)

<sup>4</sup> 13~30 條，順次同比丘戒捨懺之 1、2、3、6、7、8、9、10、18、19、20、22、23、25、26、27、28、30。

13. When a bhikkhunī has finished her robe and the frame is destroyed (her kathina privileges are in abeyance),

dhāretabbam. Tam atikkāmentiyā, nissaggiyam pācittiyam.  
 保有 它 超過 捨 懈  
 dharati ta atikkāmaya nissaggaiya pācittaika  
 grd.(m.s.Nom.) m.s.Acc. adj.(f.s.Abl.) adj.(f.s.Nom.) adj.(f.s.Nom.)

額外的布最多可以保存十天，超過這(期限)的話，犯捨懥。

she is to keep extra robe-cloth ten days at most. Beyond that, it is to be forfeited and confessed.

#### 14. <sup>1</sup>Udositasikkhāpadam離開三衣過夜(=Bhikkhu NP 2)

14. Niṭṭhitacīvaraśmīm bhikkhuniyā ubbhataśmīm kaṭhine ekarattam'pi ce bhikkhunī<sup>1</sup>  
 完了 衣服 比丘尼 捨，除去 迦提那 一 夜 甚至 如果 比丘尼  
 niṭṭhīta + cīvara bhikkhunī uddharati kaṭhina eka+rattam'+api ce bhikkhunī<sup>1</sup>  
 pp. m.s.Loc. f.s.Ins. pp.(m.s.Loc.) m.s.Loc. n.s.Acc. ind. conj. f.s.Nom.

十四、當比丘尼備妥好了衣服、已經捨迦提那(功德衣的特許)時，比丘尼即使一個晚上

14. When a bhikkhunī has finished her robe and the frame is destroyed (her kaṭhina privileges are in abeyance): If she dwells apart from (any of) her five robes even for one night

ticīvarena vippavaseyya aññatra bhikkhunisammutiyā, nissaggiyam pācittiyam.  
 三 衣 離開而住 除了 比丘尼 同意 捨 懈  
 ti+cīvara vippavasati aññatra bhikkhunī+sammuti nissaggaiya pācittaika  
 n.s.Ins. 3s.opt. adv. f. f.s.Abl. adj.(f.s.Nom.) adj.(f.s.Nom.)

離開三衣而住的話，除了比丘尼(僧團)同意外，犯捨懥。

— unless authorized by the bhikkhunīs — it is to be forfeited and confessed.

#### 15. Akālacīvaraśikkhāpadam 非時衣(=Bhikkhu NP 3)

15. Niṭṭhitacīvaraśmīm bhikkhuniyā ubbhataśmīm kaṭhine, bhikkhuniyā pan'eva akāla cīvara  
 完了 衣服 比丘尼 捨，除去 迦提那 比丘尼 又 強調詞 非時 衣服  
 niṭṭhīti cīvara bhikkhunī uddharati kaṭhina bhikkhunī pana+eva a+kāla+cīvara  
 pp. m.s.Loc. f.s.Ins. pp.(m.s.Loc.) m.s.Loc. f.s.Dat. adv. m. n.s.Nom.

十五、當比丘尼備妥了衣服、已經捨出迦提那(功德衣的特許)時，如果在不恰當的時間

15. When a bhikkhunī has finished her robe and the frame is destroyed (her kaṭhina privileges are in abeyance): Should out-of-season robe-cloth accrue to her,

uppajjeyya, ākaṇkhamānāya bhikkhuniyā patiggahetabbam, patiggahetvā khippam eva  
 出現 希望 比丘尼 接受 接受 快速 強調詞  
 ud-pajjati ākaṇkhati bhikkhunī patiggahāti patiggahāti khippa eva

<sup>1</sup> Udosita：原意為「小屋」。

3s.opt. adj.(f.s.Ins.) f.s.Ins. grd.(m.s.Nom.) ger. adv.(m.s.Acc.) adv.

有布料要給比丘尼，想要(衣)的比丘尼可以接受，接受後應該儘快作好。

she may accept it if she so desires. Having accepted it, she is to make it up immediately (into a cloth requisite).

kāretabbam. No c'assa pāripūrī māsaparamam tāya bhikkhuniyā tam cīvaram  
 作 不 如果 這 足夠 月 最多 這 比丘尼 這 布  
 karoti no ce ayam pāripūrī māsa+parama ta bhikkhunī ta cīvara  
 grd.(m.s.Nom.) adv.conj. f.s.Gen. f.s.Nom. m. m.s.Acc. f.s.Ins. f.s.Ins. n.s.Nom. n.s.Nom.

如果這(布料)不夠(作成衣)，那位比丘尼最多可以存放這塊布一個月，

But should it not be enough, she may lay it aside for a month at most

nikkhipitabbam ūnassa pāripūriyā satiyā paccāsāya. Tato ce uttarim nikkipiyya  
 存放 不足 完全 是 期待 此 如果 超過 存放  
 nikkipati ūna pāri+pūrī athi pati+āsā(梵 āsā)希望 ta ce uttarim nikkipati  
 grd.(n.s.Nom.) f.s.Gen. f.s.Gen. ppr.(f.s.Loc.) f.s.Loc. m.s.Abl. conj. adv. 3s.opt.

以期補足不夠的。如果存放超過這(期限)，

if she has an expectation for filling the lack. If she should keep it beyond that,

satiyā'pi paccāsāya, nissaggyam pācittiyam.  
 是 甚至 期待 捨 懈  
 athi+api paṭi+āsā nissaggaya pācittaika  
 f.s.Loc.ind. f.s.Loc. adj.(f.s.Nom.) adj.(f.s.Nom.)

即使是為了期待(補足不夠的)，犯捨懶。

even when she has an expectation (for further cloth), it is to be forfeited and confessed.

## 16. Aññātakaviññattisikkhāpadam(向沒有親戚關係者)乞求衣(=Bhikkhu NP 6)

16. Yā pana bhikkhunī aññātakam gahapatim vā gahapatānim vā cīvaram viññāpeyya  
 任何 比丘尼 無 親戚 在家男 或 在家女 或 布料 乞求  
 ya pana bhikkhunī a+ññataka gahapati vā gahapatāni vā cīvara vijānāti  
 f.s.Nom.adv. f.s.Nom. adj.(m.s.Acc.) m.s.Acc. conj. f.s.Acc. conj. n.s.Acc. 3s.opt.

十六、若比丘尼向沒有親戚關係的在家男或女乞求衣(料)，

16. Should any bhikkhunī ask for robe-cloth from a man or woman householder unrelated to her,

aññatra samayā, nissaggyam pācittiyam. Tatthāyam samayo, acchinnacīvarā vā hoti  
 除了 情況 時候 捨 懈 在此 這 情況 條件 被偷 衣 或 有

aññatram samaya nissaggaiya pācittaika tattha+ayam samaya <acchindati + cīvara vā < hū  
 adv. n.s.Abl. m.s.Nom. m.s.Nom. adv. m.s.Nom. m.s.Nom. pp. f.s.Nom. conj. 3s.pr.

除了(適當的)情況以外，犯捨懶。這裡的適當情況是這樣：比丘尼的衣服被偷、

except at the proper occasion, it is to be forfeited and confessed. Here the proper occasion is this: The bhikkhunī's robe has been snatched away

bhikkhunī naṭṭhacīvarā vā, ayam tattha samayo.  
 比丘尼 失去 衣 或 這 如此 情況  
 bhikkhunī nassati cīvara vā ima tattha samaya  
 f.s.Nom. pp. m.p.Nom. conj. m.s.Nom. adv. m.s.Nom.

或是衣服破掉。這是這裡的適當情況。

or destroyed. This is the proper occasion here.

## 17.Tatuttarisikkhāpadam 接受非親戚在家人的布料(=Bhikkhu NP 7)

17.Tañce aññātako gahapati vā gahapatānī vā bahūhi cīvarehi abhihaṭṭhum pavāreyya  
 她 如果 無 親戚 在家男 或 在家女 或 許多 布料 拿 邀請 恣意  
 tam + ce a+ñātaka gahapati vā gahapatānī vā bahu cīvara abhiharati pavāreti  
 m.s.Acc. conj. m.s.Nom. m.s.Nom. conj. f.s.Nom. conj. n.p.Ins. n.p.Ins. inf. 3s.opt.

十七、沒有親戚關係的在家男或女邀請，恣意地拿許多布料，

17. If that unrelated man or woman householder presents the bhikkhunī with many robes (pieces of robe-cloth),

santaruttaraparaman tāya bhikkhuniyā tato cīvaram sāditabbam.  
 內 上 最多 這 比丘尼 此 布料 接受  
 santara+uttara+parama ta bhikkhunī ta cīvara sādiyati  
 m.s.Acc. f.s.Ins. f.s.Ins. n.s.Abl. n.s.Nom. grd.(m.s.Nom.)

這位比丘尼最多可以接受內裙及上衣(的布料)。

she is to accept at most (enough for) an upper and a lower robe.

Tato ce uttari sādiyeyya, nissaggyam pācittiyam.  
 此 如果 超過 接受 捨 懶  
 ta ce uttari sādiyati nissaggaiya pācittaika  
 n.s.Abl. conj. adv. 3s.opt. adj.(f.s.Nom.) adj.(f.s.Nom.)

如果接受超過這(限量)，犯捨懶。

If she accepts more than that, it is to be forfeited and confessed.

## 18.Pathama-upakkhaṭasikkhāpadam(指定非親戚在家人)準備布料(1) (=Bhikkhu NP 8)

18.Bhikkhunī pan'eva uddissa aññātakassa gahapatissa vā gahapatāniyā vā cīvaracetāpanam  
 比丘尼 而 強調詞 指定 無 親戚 在家男 或 在家女 或 布料 等值品

bhikkhunī pana+eva uddisati a+ñātaka gahapati vā gahapatānī vā cīvara+<cetāpeti  
f.s.Acc. adv. ind. ger. m.s.Gen. m.s.Gen. conj. f.s.Gen. conj. n. n.s.Nom.

**十八、若比丘尼，指定非親戚關係的在家男或女備妥了布料的資金，**

### 18. In case a man or woman householder unrelated (to the bhikkhunī)

upakkhaṭam hoti, “Iminā cīvaracetāpannena cīvaram cetāpetvā itthannāmarām  
準備 有 這 布料 等值品 布料 交換 這樣子 稱呼  
upa+karoti < hū ima cīvara+<cetāpeti cīvara cetāpeti ittha+nāma  
pp.(n.s.Nom.) 3s.pr. m.s.Ins. n. n.s.Ins. n.s.Acc. ger. m.s.Acc.

bhikkhuniṁ cīvarena acchādessāmī” ti,

比丘尼 布料 穿  
bhikkhunī cīvara acchādeti + iti  
f.s.Acc. n.s.Ins. 1s.fut. ind.

(想：)「用這布料的資金買布料後，我要送布料給某某比丘尼穿。」

prepares a robe fund for the sake of a bhikkhunī, thinking. “Having purchased a robe with this robe fund, I will clothe the bhikkhunī named so-and-so with a robe.”

tatra cesā bhikkhunī pubbe appavāritā upasaṅkamitvā cīvare vikappam āpajjeyya,  
然後 如果 這 比丘尼 之前 不 邀請 前往 布料 考慮 做 提議  
tatra ce + ta bhikkhunī pubba a+pavāreti upa+saṁ+kamati cīvara vikappa āpajjati  
adv. conj. f.s.Nom. f.s.Nom. m.s.Loc. pp.(m.s.Nom.) ger. n.s.Loc. m.s.Acc. 3s.opt.

然後，如果這位比丘尼未受邀請前就去對布料提出建議，說：

If the bhikkhunī, not previously invited, approaching (the householder) should make a stipulation with regard to the robe, saying,

“Sādhu vata mam āyasmā iminā cīvaracetāpannena evarūpam vā  
好 實在 我 大德 這 布料 等值品 如此 形態 或  
sādhu vata aham āyasmant ima cīvara+<cetāpeti eva+ rūpa vā  
interj. adv. m.s.Acc. m.s.Nom. m.s.Ins. n. n.s.Ins. n.s.Acc. conj.

「實在很好，請大德用這布料的資金買這樣子那樣子的布料送給我。」

“It would be good indeed, sir, if you clothed me (with a robe), having purchased a robe of such-and-such a sort with this robe fund”

evarūpam vā cīvaram cetāpetvā acchādehi”ti, kalyāṇakamyatarā upādāya, nissaggyai pācittiyam.  
如此 形態 或 衣服 交換 送 好的 欲求 因於 捨 懶  
eva+rūpa vā cīvara cetāpeti acchādeti kalyāṇa+kamyatā upādiyati nissaggaiya pācittaika  
n.s.Acc. conj. n.s.Acc. ger. 2s.imp. adj. f.s.Acc. ger. adv. adj.(f.s.Nom.) adj.(f.s.Nom.)

出於想要好的布料□，犯捨懶。

— out of a desire for something fine — it is to be forfeited and confessed.

## 19.Dutiya-upakkhaṭasikkhāpadam(指定非親戚在家人)準備布料(2) (=Bhikkhu NP 9)

## 19.Bhikkhunim pan'eva uddissa ubhinnam aññātakānam gahapatīnam vā gahapatānīnam

比丘尼	而	強調詞	指定	兩個	無 親戚	在家男	或	在家女
bhikkhunī	pana+eva	uddissati	ubhinna	a+ññātaka	gahapati	vā	gahapatānī	
f.s.Acc.	adv.	ind.	ger.	m.p.Gen.	m.p.Gen.	m.p.Gen.	conj.	f.p.Gen.

十九、若比丘尼，指定兩位(與該比丘尼)沒有親戚關係的在家男或女

19. In case two householders — men or women — unrelated (to the bhikkhunī)

vā paccekacīvaracetāpannāni upakkhatā honti, “imehi mayam paccekacīvaracetāpannehi	或 各別 布料 等值品 準備 有 這 我們 各別 布料 等值品
vā pacceka+cīvara+cetāpeti upa+karoti < <b>hū</b> ima aham pacceka + cīvara + cetāpeti	conj. adj. n.m. n.p.Nom. pp.(m.p.Nom.) 3p.pr. m.p.Ins. m.p.Nom. adj. n. m. n.p.Ins.

備妥了各自的布料資金，(討論說)：「用這些各自的布料資金

prepare separate robe funds for the sake of a bhikkhunī, thinking, “Having purchased separate robes with these separate robe funds of ours,

paccekacīvarāni cetāpetvā itthannāmām bhikkhunim cīvarehi acchādessāmā” ti.

各別 布料 交換 這樣子 稱呼 比丘尼 衣服 送	pacceka + cīvara cetāpeti ittha+nāma bhikkhunī cīvara acchādeti+iti
adj. m.p.Acc. ger. m.s.Acc. f.s.Acc. n.p.Ins. 1p.fut. ind.	

買各自的布料後，我們就送布料給某某比丘尼。」

we will clothe the bhikkhunī named so-and-so with robes”.

Tatra cesā bhikkhūnī pubbe appavārito upasaṅkamitvā cīvare vīkappam āpajjeyya,	然後 如果 這 比丘尼 之前 不 邀請 前往 衣服 考慮 做 提議
tatra ce ta bhikkhūnī pubba a+pavāreti upa+saṁ+kamati cīvara vīkappa āpajjati	adv.conj. f.s.Nom. f.s.Nom. adj.(m.s.Loc.) pp.(m.s.Nom.) ger. n.s.Loc. m.s.Acc. 3s.opt.

然後，如果這位比丘尼未受邀請前就去對布料提出建議，說：

If the bhikkhunī, not previously invited, approaching (them) should make a stipulation with regard to the robe, saying,

“Sādhu vata marī āyasmanto imehi paccekacīvaracetāpannehi evarūpaṁ vā evarūpaṁ

好 實在 我 大德 這 各自 布料 等值品 如此 形態 或 如此 形態	sādhu vata aham āyasmant ima pacceka+cīvara+<cetāpeti eva+rūpa vā eva+rūpa
interj. adv. m.s.Acc. m.p.Nom. m.p.Ins. n.p.Ins. n.s.Acc. conj. n.s.Acc.	

vā cīvaraṁ cetāpetvā acchādetha ubho'va santā ekenā”ti	或 布料 交換 送 兩個 強調詞 是 一
vā cīvara cetāpeti acchādeti ubho+eva atthi ekena + iti	conj. n.s.Acc. ger. 2p.imp. adv. ppr.(m.p.Nom.) m.s.Ins. ind.

「實在很好，請諸大德用這些各自的布料資金，二人就合買一塊這樣子那樣子的

布料送給我。」

“It would be good indeed, sirs, if you clothed me (with a robe), having purchased a robe of such-and-such a sort with these separate robe funds, the two (funds) together for one (robe)”

kalyāṇakamyatām upādāya, nissaggyam pācittiyam.  
 好的 欲求 因於 捨 懈  
 kalyāṇa+kamyatā upādiyati nissaggiya pācittaika  
 f.s.Acc. ger.adv. adj.(f.s.Nom.) adj.(f.s.Nom.)

出於想要好的(布料)，犯捨懈。

— out of a desire for something fine —it is to be forfeited and confessed.

## 20.Rājasikkhāpadam 向保管衣資者索取布料(=Bhikkhu NP 10)

20.Bhikkhuniṁ pan’eva uddissa rājā vā rājabhoggo vā brāhmaṇo vā gahapatiko vā dūtena  
 比丘尼 而 強調詞 為了指定 王 或 王 屬下 或 婆羅門 或 在家人 或 使者  
 bhikkhunī pana+eva uddissati rājan rajabhogga brāhmaṇa gahapatika dūta  
 f.s.Acc. adv. ger. m.s.Nom. m.s.Nom. m.s.Nom. m.s.Nom. m.s.Nom. m.s.Ins.

二十、為了特定的比丘尼，如果國王、國王的臣屬、婆羅門、或在家人

20. In case a king, a royal official, a brahman, or a householder

cīvaracetāpanam pahiṇeyya,  
 布料 等值品 派遣  
 cīvara+cetāpana pahiṇati  
 n.s.Acc. 3s.opt.

派使者送布料的資金(去給她)，(說)：

sends a robe fund for the sake of a bhikkhunī via a messenger, (saying,)

“iminā cīvaracetāpannena cīvaraṁ cetāpetvā itthannāmaṁ bhikkhuniṁ cīvarena  
 這 布料 等值品 布料 交換 這樣子 稱呼 比丘尼 衣服  
 ima cīvara+cetāpanna cīvara cetāpeti ittha+nāma bhikkhunī cīvara  
 n.s.Ins. n. n.s.Ins. n.s.Acc. ger. m.s.Acc. m.s.Acc. n.s.Ins.

「妳用這布料的資金買布料後，送布料給某某比丘尼。」

“Having purchased a robe with this robe fund, clothe the bhikkhunī named so-and-so with a robe”:

acchādehī”ti. So ce dūto tam bhikkhuniṁ upasaṅkamitvā evam vadeyya,  
 送 這 如果 使者 這 比丘尼 參見 如此 說  
 acchādeti+iti ta ce dūta ta bhikkhunī upa+sam+ kamati evam vadati  
 2s.imp.ind. m.s.Nom. conj. m.s.Nom. m.s.Acc. m.s.Acc. ger. adv. 3s.opt.

如果這位使者參見這位比丘尼後，如此說：

If the messenger, approaching the bhikkhunī, should say,

“idam kho, ayye, ayyam uddissa cīvaracetāpanam ābhataṁ,  
 這 而 大姐 大姐 指定 布料 等值品 帶來  
 ima kho uddissati cīvara + cetāpana ā+bharati  
 m.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Voc. f.s.Acc. ger. n. n.s.Nom. pp.(m.s.Nom.)

「大姐！這布料的資金特別為大姐帶來了；

“This is a robe fund being delivered for the sake of the lady.

paṭiggaṇhātāyyā cīvaracetāpanan”ti. Tāya bhikkhuniyā so dūto evam assa vacanīyo,  
 接受 大姐 布料 等值品 這 比丘尼 這 使者 如此 有 說  
 (paṭiggaṇhātu+āyyā) cīvara + cetāpanam + iti ta bhikkhunī ta dūta evarīn athi vatti  
 3s.imp. f.s.Nom. n. m.s.Acc. ind. f.s.Ins. f.s.Ins. m.s.Nom. m.s.Nom. adv. 3s.opt. grd.(f.s.Nom.)

請大姐收下布料的資金。」這位比丘尼可以如此告訴這位使者，說：

May the lady accept this robe fund,” then the bhikkhunī is to tell the messenger:

“na kho mayam, āvuso, cīvaracetāpanam paṭiggaṇhāma, cīvarañ ca kho mayam  
 不 而 我 朋友 布料 等值品 接受 布料 和 而 我  
 na kho aham āyasmant cīvara+cetāpana paṭiggaṇhāti cīvara ca kho aham  
 adv. adv. m.p.Nom. m.p.Voc. n. n.s.Acc. 1p.imp. m.s.Acc. conj. adv. m.p.Nom.

paṭiggaṇhāma kālena kappiyān”ti.  
 接受 時 適合，可允許  
 paṭiggaṇhāti kāla kappiyān< kappiya + iti  
 1p.imp. m.s.Ins. m.s.Acc. ind.

「朋友！我們不收布料的資金，而布料則我們在恰當的時間適合接受。」

“We do not accept robe funds, my friend. We accept robes (robe-cloth) as are proper according to season.”

So ce dūto tam bhikkhunim evam vadeyya,  
 這 如果 使者 這 比丘尼 如此 說  
 ta ce dūta ta bhikkhunī evam vadati  
 m.s.Nom. conj. m.s.Nom. m.s.Acc. m.s.Acc. adv. 3s.opt.

如果這位使者如此問這位比丘尼：

If the messenger should say to the bhikkhunī,

“atthi panāyyāya, koci veyyāvaccakaro”ti,  
 是 而 大姐 任何人 服務 作  
 atthi pana ka veyyāvacca+karo + iti  
 3s.pr. adv. m.s.Gen. ind.(m.s.Nom.) m.s.Nom. ind.

「大姐有任何的侍者嗎？」

“Does the lady have a steward?”

cīvaratthikāya, bhikkhave, bhikkhuniyā veyyāvaccakaro niddisitabbo ārāmiko vā  
 布料 需求 比丘尼 比丘尼 服務 作 指出 服務道揚的人 或  
 cīvara+atthika bhikkhunī bhikkhunī veyyāvacca+karoti niddisati ārāmika  
 n. adj.(f.s.Ins.) f.p.Voc. f.s.Ins. n. m.s.Nom. grd.(m.s.Nom.) m.s.Nom.

upāsako vā, “Eso kho āvuso bhikkhuniyā veyyāvaccakaro”ti.

優婆塞 或 這 而 朋友 比丘尼 服務 作  
 upāsaka vā eta kho āvuso bhikkhunī veyyācacca+karo + iti  
 m.s.Nom. conj. m.s.Nom. adv. m.s.Voc. f.p.Gen. n. m.s.Nom. ind.

**諸比丘尼！需要布料的比丘尼可以指出(擔任)侍者的道場服務員或優婆塞，  
 (說)：「朋友！這位是諸比丘尼的侍者。」**

then, bhikkhunīs, if the bhikkhunī desires a robe, she may indicate a steward — either a monastery attendant or a lay follower — (saying,) “That, sir, is the bhikkhunīs’ steward.”

So ce dūto tam veyyāvaccakaram saññāpetvā tam bhikkunīm upasaṅkamitvā  
 這 如果 使者 這 服務 作 指導 這 比丘尼 拜見  
 ta ce dūta ta veyyāvacca+karoti saññāpeti ta bhikkhunī upasañ+kamati  
 m.s.Nom. conj. m.s.Nom. m.s.Acc. n. m.s.Acc. ger. f.s.Acc. f.s.Acc. ger.

**如果這位使者指導那侍者、拜見那位比丘尼後，**

If the messenger, having instructed the steward and going to the bhikkhunī,

evam vadeyya, “yam kho, ayye, ayyā veyyāvaccakaram niddisi, saññatto so mayā,  
 如此 說 那位 而 大姐 大姐 服務 作 指出 指導 他 我  
 evam vadati ya kho veyyāvacca+karoti niddisati saññāpeti ta aham  
 adv. 3s.opt. m.s.Acc. adv. f.s.Voc. f.s.Nom. n. m.s.Acc. 3s.aor. pp.(m.s.Nom.) m.s.Nom. m.s.Ins.

**如此報告：「大姐！我已經指導大姐指示的那位侍者，**

should say, “I have instructed the steward the lady indicated.

upasaṅkamatāyyā kālena, cīvarena tam acchādessatī” ti.  
 前往 大姐 時 布料 妳 送  
 upasañ+kamati kāla cīvara ta(=tvam) acchādeti + iti  
 3s.imp. f.s.Nom. m.s.Ins. n.s.Ins. m.s.Acc. 3s.fut. ind.

**請大姐在恰當的時候去，他就會送布料給妳。」**

May the lady go (to her) and she will clothe you with a robe in season,”

Cīvaratthikāya, bhikkhave, bhikkhuniyā veyyāvaccakaro upasaṅkamitvā  
 布料 需要 比丘尼 比丘尼 服務 作 前往  
 cīvara+atthika bhikkhunī bhikkhunī veyyāvacca+karoti upa+sam+kamati  
 adj.(f.s.Ins.) f.p.Voc. f.s.Ins. n. m.s.Nom. ger.

**諸比丘尼！需要布料的比丘尼前往後，**

then the bhikkhunī, desiring a robe and approaching the steward,

dvittikkhattum codetabbo sāretabbo “attho me āvuso cīvarenā”ti.  
 二三 次 敦促 使想起 需要 我 朋友 布料  
 div+ti+khattu codeti sāreti attha aham āvuso cīvarena + iti  
 adv.(m.s.Acc.) grd.(m.s.Nom.) grd.(m.s.Nom.) m.s.Nom. m.s.Ins. m.s.Voc. m.s.Ins. ind.

**可以敦促侍者兩三次，提醒(他)說：「朋友！我需要布料。」**

may prompt and remind her two or three times, “I have need of a robe.”

Dvittikkhattum codayamānā sārayamānā tam cīvaram abhinippahdeyya,  
 二三 次 敦促 使想起 這 布料 實現、帶來  
 div+ti+khattu codeti sāreti ta cīvara abhinippajjati  
 adv.(m.s.Acc.) pass.ppr.(f.s.Nom.) pass.ppr.(f.s.Nom.) m.s.Acc. n.s.Acc. caus.3s.opt.

icc’etam kusalam.  
 如此 這 好  
 iti + eta kusala  
 n.s.Nom. n.s.Nom.

**當(侍者)被敦促提醒兩三次時，這布料到手，這樣那就好。**

Should (the steward) produce the robe after being prompted and reminded two or three times, that is good.

No ce abhinippahdeyya, catukkhattum, pañcakkhattum, chakkhattuparamam  
 不 如果 實現 四 次 五 次 六 次 最多  
 no ce abhinippajjati catu+khattu paññca+khattu cha+khattu+parama  
 adv. conj. caus.3s.opt. adv.(m.s.Acc.) adv.(m.s.Acc.) m.s.Acc.

tunhībhūtena uddissa tiṭṭabbam.  
 沈默 狀態 為了 站  
 tunhī+bhūta uddissati tiṭṭhati  
 m.s.Ins. ger. grd.(m.s.Acc.)

**如果沒有到手，(那比丘尼)可以為了(布料)沈默地站著四次、五次，最多六次。**

If she should not produce the robe, (the bhikkhunī) should stand in silence four times, five times, six times at most for that purpose.

Catukkhattum, pañcakkhattum, chakkhattuparamam tunhībhūto uddissa tiṭṭhamānā  
 四 次 五 次 六 次 最多 沈默 狀態 為了 站  
 catu+khattu paññca+khattu cha+khattu+parama tunhī+bhūta uddissa tiṭṭhati  
 adv.(m.s.Acc.) adv.(m.s.Acc.) m.s.Acc. pp.(m.s.Nom.) ger. ppr.(f.s.Nom.)

tam cīvaram abhinippahdeyya, icc’etam kusalam.  
 這 布料 實現 如此 這 好  
 ta cīvara abhinippajjati iti + eta kusala  
 n.s.Acc. n.s.Acc. caus.3s.opt. n.s.Nom. n.s.Nom.

**為了(布料)沈默地站著四次、五次，最多六次時，如果這布料到手，這樣就就好。**

Should (the steward) produce the robe after (the bhikkhunī) has stood in silence for the purpose four, five, six times at most, that is good.

Tato ce uttarim vāyamamāno, tam cīvaraṁ abhinippahādeyya, nissaggiyāṁ pācittiyam.

它 如果 超過 勸於 這 衣服 實現 捨 懈  
 ta ce uttarim vāyamati ta cīvara abhinippahajjati nissaggaiya pācittaika  
 m.s.Abl. conj. adv. ppr.(m.s.Nom.) n.s.Acc. n.s.Acc. caus.3s.opt. adj.(f.s.Nom.) adj.(f.s.Nom.)

**如果沒有到手，當(那比丘尼)盡力超了過那(次數)時，這布料到手(的話)，犯捨懈。**

If she should not produce the robe (at that point), should she then produce the robe after (the bhikkhunī) has endeavored further than that, it is to be forfeited and confessed.

No ce abhinippahādeyya, yat'assā cīvaracetāpannam ābhataṁ, tattha sāmāṁ vā gantabbam,  
 不 如果 實現 從哪裡 她 布料 等值品 拿來 這裡 自己 或 去  
 no ce abhinippahajjati yato+ assā cīvara+<cetāpeti ābharati tattha sāmāṁ vā gacchati  
 adv. conj. caus.3s.opt. m.s.Abl. f.s.Dat. n.s.Nom. pp.(m.s.Nom.) adv. adv. conj. grd.(m.s.Nom.)

**如果(布料)沒有到手，從哪裡為她送來布料資金，(那比丘尼)就應該親自去、**

If she should not produce (the robe), then the bhikkhunī herself should go to the place from which the robe fund was brought,

dūto vā pāhetabbo, “yam kho tumhe āyasmanto bhikkhunim uddissa cīvaracetāpanam pahiṇittha,  
 使者 或 派 彼 而 姝們 大德 比丘尼 為了 布料 等值品 送  
 dūta pāhiṇati ya kho tvaṁ āyasmant bhikkhunī uddissati cīvara+cetapeti pahiṇati  
 m.s.Nom. grd.(m.s.Nom.) m.s.Acc. adv. m.p.Nom. m.p.Voc. f.s.Acc. ger. n. m.s.Acc. 2p.aor.

**或應該派使者去那裡(說)：「諸大德！您為了比丘尼送來的那布料的資金，**

or a messenger should be sent (to say), “The robe fund that you, venerable sirs, sent for the sake of the bhikkhunī

na tam tassā bhikkhuniyā kiñci attham anubhoti, yuñjant'āyasmanto sakam,  
 不 此 這 比丘尼 任何 利益 提供 使用 大德 自己的  
 na ta ta bhikkhunī kim+ci attha anubhoti yuñjati āyasmant saka  
 m.s.Nom. f.s.Dat. f.s.Dat. n.s.Acc. m.s.Acc. 3s.pr. 3p.imp. m.p.Nom. m.s.Acc.

**沒有提供給那位比丘尼任何好處。請大德受用自己的(布料資金)，**

has given no benefit to the bhikkhunī at all. May the you be united with what is yours.

mā vo sakam vinassī'ti. Ayam tattha sāmīci.  
 不要 你們的 自己的 失去 這 這裡 正確的  
 mā tvam saka vinassati ima tattha sāmicī  
 adv. m.p.Gen. m.s.Nom. 2s.aor. f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom.

**您自己的不要失去。在這裡這是正確的(過程)。**

May what is yours not be lost.” This is the proper course here.

## Pattavaggotatiyo 鉢品第三

### 21.Rūpiyasikkhāpadam 接受金銀(=Bhikkhu NP 18)

**21.** Ya pana bhikkhunī jātarūparajatām uggañheyya vā uggañhāpeyya vā upanikkittam vā  
 任何 比丘尼 黃金 銀 拿取 或 使拿取 或 存放 或  
 ya pana bhikkhunī jātarūpa+rajata uggañhāti uggañhāpeti upa+nikkhipati  
 f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom. n. n.s.Acc. 3s.opt. caus.3s.opt. pp.(m.s.Acc.)

sādiyeyya, nissaggiyam pācittiyan.

接受	捨	懺
sādiyati	nissaggaiya	pācittaika
3s.opt.	adj.(f.s.Nom.)	adj.(f.s.Nom.)

**二十一、若比丘尼允諾拿、或叫人拿、或存放金、銀<sup>1</sup>，犯捨懺。**

21. Should any bhikkhunī take gold and silver, or have it taken, or consent to its being deposited (near her), it is to be forfeited and confessed.

### 22.Rūpiyasamvohārasikkhāpadam 買賣金銀(=Bhikkhu NP 19)

**22.** Yā pana bhikkhunī nānappakārakam rūpiyasarivohāram samāpajjeyya, nissaggiyam pācittiyan.  
 任何 比丘尼 不同的 種 銀 流通 從事 捨 懺  
 ya pana bhikkhunī nānā+pakāraka rūpiya + sarivohāra samāpajjati nissaggaiya pācittaika  
 f.s.Acc. adv. f.s.Nom. adj. m.s.Acc. n. m.s.Acc. 3s.opt. adj.(f.s.Nom.) adj.(f.s.Nom.)

**二十二、若比丘尼從事於買賣各種<sup>2</sup>金銀，犯捨懺。**

22. Should any bhikkhunī engage in various types of monetary exchange, it (the income) is to be forfeited and confessed.

### 23.Kayavikkayasikkhāpadam 買賣物品(=Bhikkhu NP 20)

**23.** Yā pana bhikkhunī nānappakārakam kayavikkayarām samāpajjeyya, nissaggiyam pācittiyan.  
 任何 比丘尼 不同 種 買 賣 從事 捨 懺  
 ya pana bhikkhunī nānā + pakāraka kaya+ vikkaya samāpajjati nissaggaiya pācittaika  
 f.s.Nom.adv. f.s.Nom. adj. adj.(m.s.Acc.) m. m.s.Acc. 3s.opt. adj.(f.s.Nom.) adj.(f.s.Nom.)

**二十三、若比丘尼從事於各種<sup>3</sup>買賣，犯捨懺。**

23. Should any bhikkhunī engage in various types of trade, (the article obtained) is to be forfeited and confessed.

<sup>1</sup> Pārā.III,238(CS:pg.345)：「金：黃金。銀：迦利沙鉢拿(硬幣)、銅錢、木錢、樹膠錢等一般的通貨。」

<sup>2</sup> Pārā.III,239(CS:Pārā.pg.348)：「各種不同：已成品、未成品、或(兼具)已成品及未成品。已成品：頭飾、頸飾、手飾、腳飾、腰飾。未成品：整塊未成品。已成品及未成品：兩者兼具。」

<sup>3</sup> Pārā.III,242(CS:pg.351)：「各種(物品的)買賣：包括：衣服、食物、被褥、藥、化妝品、牙籤、紗線等。」

## 24. Ūnapañcabandhanasikkhāpadam 以未滿五綴(的鉢換新鉢) (=Bhikkhu NP 22)

24. Yā pana bhikkhunī ūnapañcabandhanena pattena aññām navām pattaṁ cetāpeyya,  
 任何 比丘尼 不足 五 補綴 鉢 其它 新 鉢 換  
 ya pana bhikkhunī ūna+pañca+bandha patta añña nava patta cetāpeti  
 f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom. adj. m.s.Ins. m.s.Ins. m.s.Acc. m.s.Acc. m.s.Acc. 3s.opt.

**二十四、若比丘尼以不到五個補綴的鉢換其它的新鉢，**

24. Should any bhikkhunī with an alms bowl having less than five mends ask for another new bowl,

nissaggiyām pācittiyam.

捨 餓  
 nissaggiya pācittaika  
 adj.(f.s.Nom.) adj.(f.s.Nom.)

**犯捨餓。**

it is to be forfeited and confessed.

Tāya bhikkhuniyā so patto bhikkhuniparisāya nissajjtabbo. Yo ca tassā bhikkhuniparisāya  
 這 比丘尼 這 鉢 比丘尼 大眾 放棄 彼 而且 這 比丘尼 大眾  
 ta bhikkhunī ta patta bhikkhunī+parisā nissajjati ya ca ta bhikkhunī+parisā  
 f.s.Ins. f.s.Ins. m.s.Nom. m.s.Nom. f. f.s.Dat. grd.(m.s.Nom.) m.s.Nom. conj. f.s.Gen. f. f.s.Gen.

**這位比丘尼應該捨這個鉢給比丘尼(僧)眾。而那比丘尼眾(輾轉遞捨後的)**

The bowl is to be forfeited by the bhikkhunī to the company of bhikkhunīs.

pattapariyanto, so ca tassā bhikkhuniyā padatabbo, “ayam te bhikkhuni patto,  
 鉢 最後 此 而且 這 比丘尼 紿予 這 婦的 比丘尼 鉢  
 patta+paryanta ta ca ta bhikkhunī padati ayam+ te bhikkhunī patta  
 m. m.s.Nom. m.s.Nom. conj. f.s.Dat. f.s.Dat. grd.(m.s.Nom.) m.s.Nom. s.Gen. f.s.Voc. m.s.Nom.

**任何最後的鉢應該交給這位比丘尼，(並說)：「比丘尼！這個是妳的鉢，**

That company of bhikkhunīs' final bowl should be presented to the bhikkhunī,  
 (saying,) "This, bhikkhunī, is your bowl.

yāvabhedanāya dhāretabbo”ti. Ayam tattha sāmīci.  
 直到 破壞 保持 這 這裡 正確  
 yāva + bhedana dhāreti iti ima tattha sāmīci  
 adv. m.s.Dat. grd.(m.s.Nom.) ind. f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom.

**應該保持(用)到壞掉為止。」在這裡這是正確的(過程)。**

It is to be kept until broken.” This is the proper course here.

## 25.Bhesajjasikkhāpadam 七日藥(儲存最多儲存七天) (=Bhikkhu NP 23)

**25.** Yāni kho pana tāni gilānānam bhikkhunīnam paṭisāyanīyāni bhesajjāni, seyyath’idam:

彼 ya	又 kho	此 pana	生病 ta	比丘尼 bhikkhunī	服用 patisāyatī	藥 bhesajja	正如 seyyathā	這 idam
n.p.Nom.	adv. n.p.Nom.	n.p.Gen.	f.p.Gen.	grd.(m.p.Nom.)	m.p.Nom.	adv.		

二十五、有這些生病的比丘尼服用的藥，也就是：

25. There are these tonics to be taken by sick bhikkhunīs:

sappi	navanītam	telaṁ	madhu	phānitarām,	tāni	paṭiggahetvā	sattāhaparamām
酥油	奶油	油	蜂蜜	糖漿	此	接受	七天 最多
sappi	navanīta	tela	madhu	phānita	ta	paṭiggahāti	satta+aha+parama
n.s.Nom.	n.s.Nom.	n.s.Nom.	n.s.Nom.	n.s.Nom.	m.p.Acc.	ger.	n. adj.(m.s.Acc.)

酥油、奶油、油、蜂蜜、糖漿<sup>1</sup>，接受這些(藥)後，最多儲存七天可以使用。

ghee, fresh butter, oil, honey, sugar/molasses. Having been received, they are to be used from storage seven days at most.

sannidhikārakām	paribhuñjitabbāni.	Tām atikkāmentiyā, nissaggiyām pācittiyaṁ.
儲存 做	使用	這 超過 捨 懶
sannidhi+kāraka	paribhuñjati	ta atikkāmaya nissaggaiya pācittaika
m. m.s.Acc.	grd.(m.p.Nom.)	m.s.Acc. adj.(f.s.abl.) adj.(f.s.Nom.) adj.(f.s.Nom.)

如果超過這期限□，犯捨懶。

Beyond that, they are to be forfeited and confessed.

## 26.Cīvara-acchindanasikkhāpadam(贈衣後)奪回衣(=Bhikkhu NP 25)

**26.** Yā pana bhikkhunī bhikkhuniyā sāmarān cīvarān datvā kūpitā anattamanā acchindeyya vā

任何 ya	比丘尼 pana	比丘尼 bhikkhunī	自己 sāmarān	衣服 cīvara	送 dadati	生氣 kūpita	不 an+attamana	高興 acchindati	或 vā
f.s.Nom.	adv. f.s.Nom.	f.s.Dat.	adv.	n.s.Acc.	ger.	adj.(f.s.Nom.)	adj.(f.s.Nom.)	3s.opt.	

二十六、若比丘尼贈送自己的衣服給(其他)比丘尼後，憤怒不悅地取回或

26. Should any bhikkhunī — having herself given robe-cloth to (another) bhikkhunī and then being angered and displeased — snatch it away

acchindāpeyya vā, nissaggiyām	pācittiyaṁ.		
使取回 acchindāpeti	或 vā	捨 nissaggaiya	懶 pācittaika
3s.opt.	conj.	adj.(f.s.Nom.)	adj.(f.s.Nom.)

叫人取回(衣服)的話，犯捨懶。

or have it snatched away, it is to be forfeited and confessed.

<sup>1</sup> 酥油(sappi 乳酪、熟酥)、奶油(navanīta 生酥)、油(tela 茶油)、蜂蜜(madhu)、糖蜜(phānita 石蜜)。

## 27.Suttaviññattisikkhāpadam 乞求紗線(請織工們織成布料) (=Bhikkhu NP 26)

27. Yā pana bhikkhunī sāmarām suttarām viññāpetvā tantavāyehi cīvaraṁ vāyāpeyya,  
 任何 比丘尼 自己 紗線 乞求 織工 布料 織  
 ya pana bhikkhunī sāmarām sutta viññāpeti tantavāya cīvara vāyāpeti  
 f.s.Nom .adv. f.s.Nom. adv. m.s.Acc. ger. m.p.Ins. n.s.Acc. caus.3s.opt.

**二十七、若比丘尼自己乞求紗線，請織工們織成布料的話，**

27. Should any bhikkhunī, having requested thread, have robe-cloth woven by weavers,

nissaggiyam pācittiyam.

捨	懲
nissaggaiya	pācittaika
adj.(f.s.Nom.)	adj.(f.s.Nom.)

**犯捨懲。**

it is to be forfeited and confessed.

## 28.Mahāpesakārasikkhāpadam(未受請而請)織工織布(=Bhikkhu NP 27)

28. Bhikkhuniṁ pan'eva uddissa aññātako gahapati vā gahapatānī vā tantavāyehi  
 比丘尼 而 強調詞 指定 非親戚 在家男 或 在家女 或 織工  
 bhikkhunī pana+eva uddissati a+ñātaka gahapati gahapatānī tantavāya  
 f.s.Acc. adv. ger. adj.(m.s.Nom.) m.s.Nom. f.s.Nom. m.p.Ins.

**二十八、為了特定比丘尼，沒有親戚關係的在家男或女**

28. In case a man or woman householder unrelated (to the bhikkhunī)

cīvaraṁ vāyāpeyya. Tatra cesā bhikkhunī pubbe appavāritā tantavāye upasam̄kamitvā  
 布料 織 之後 如果 這 比丘尼 之前 不 邀請 織工 前往  
 cīvara vāyāpeti tatra ce + ta bhikkhunī pubba a+pavāreti tantavāya upa+saṁ+kamati  
 n.s.Acc. 3s.opt. adv. conj. f.s.Nom. f.s.Nom. adv. pp.(f.s.Nom.) m.p.Acc. ger.

**叫織工織布料(給她)。之後，如果這位比丘尼未受邀請就去織工那裡**

has robe-cloth woven by weavers for the sake of a bhikkhunī, and if the bhikkhunī, not previously invited (by the householder), having approached the weavers,

cīvare vikappam āpajjeyya, “Idam kho āvuso cīvaraṁ mām uddissa vīyati, āyatañca  
 衣服 考慮 提議 這 朋友 布料 我 指定 織 長 和  
 cīvara vikappa āpajjati ima kho āvuso cīvara aham uddissati vīyati āyatarā + ca  
 n.s.Loc. m.s.Acc. 3s.opt. n.s.Acc. adv. m.p.Voc. n.s.Acc. m.s.Acc. ger. pass.3s.pr. adj.(n.s.Acc.) conj.

**對布料提出建議：「朋友！這布料是特別為我織的，要織得長一點、**

should make stipulations with regard to the cloth, saying, “This cloth, friends, is to be woven for my sake. Make it long,

karotha vitthatañca appitañca suvītañca suppavāyitañca suvilekhitañca  
 做 寬 和 堅固 和 好好地 織 和 好好地 分散 和 好好地 刮擦 和  
 karoti vitthata appeti su+vītarñ + ca su+ pavāyatañ + ca su + vilekhitarñ + ca  
 2p.imp. adj.(n.s.Acc.) pp.(n.s.Acc.) conj. pp.(n.s.Acc.) conj. pp.(n.s.Acc.) conj.

**寬一點、緊密一點，好好地織，好好地散布，好好地梳理，**

make it broad, make it tightly woven, well woven, well spread, well scraped,

suvitacchitañ ca karotha;  
 好好地 使平坦 和 做  
 su+vitacchitarñ + ca karoti  
 pp.(m.s.Acc.) conj. 2p.imp.

**好好地整平。**

well smoothed,

app'eva nāma mayam pi āyasmantānam kiñcimattam anupadajjeyyāmā'ti,  
 或許 我們 也 大德 某 量 送禮  
api + eva nāma aham pi āyasmant kim+ci+matta anupadajjeyyāma + iti  
 ( adv.) m.p.Nom. ind. m.p.Dat. n. m.s.Acc. 1.p.opt. ind.

**或許我們也會送點禮物給大德。」**

and perhaps I may reward you with a little something”;

evañca sā bhikkhunī vatvā kiñcimattam anupadajjeyya antamaso piñdapātamattam'pi,  
 如此 而 這 比丘尼 說完 某 量 送禮 乃至 乞食 只是 也  
 evañ=ca ta bhikkhunī vatti kim+ci+matta anupadeti antamaso piñda+pāta+mattam + api  
 conj. f.s.Nom. f.s.Nom. ger. n. m.s.Acc. 3s.opt. adv. m. m. f.s.Acc. ind.

**而這位比丘尼那樣說了後，如果送某些禮物，即使只是托鉢的食物<sup>1</sup>也算，**

and should that bhikkhunī, having said that, reward them with a little something, even as much as almsfood,

nissaggiyam pācittiyañ.  
 捨 餓  
 nissaggaiya pācittaika  
 adj.(f.s.Nom.) adj.(f.s.Nom.)

<sup>1</sup> Pārā.III,260(CS:pg.373)：「托鉢的食物：粥、飯、蔬果食(硬食)、化妝品、牙籤、織布用的紗線、說法。」

**犯捨懺。**

it (the cloth) is to be forfeited and confessed.

## 29.Accekacīvarasikkhāpadam 急施衣(存放超過做衣服的時間) (=Bhikkhu NP 28)

29. Dasāhānāgataṁ kattikatemāsi puṇṇamāṁ, bhikkhuniyā pan'eva accekacīvaraṁ  
 十日未到月份名三月滿月 比丘尼 又 (緊)急 布料  
 dasa+aha+an+āgata kattika+te+māsi+puṇṇama bhikkhunī pana + eva acceka+cīvara  
 m. m.s.Acc. f. m.s.Acc. m.s.Dat. adv. adj. n.s.Nom.

**二十九、未到三個月(的雨安居)的迦提月滿月<sup>1</sup>的前十天，如果有布料急著(布施)**

29. Ten days prior to the third-month Kattika full moon, should robe-cloth offered in urgency accrue to a bhikkhunī,

uppaṭṭijeyya, accekaṁ maññamānāya bhikkhuniyā paṭiggahetabbam, paṭiggahetvā  
 產生 (緊)急 知道，認為 比丘尼 接受 接受  
 uppajjati acceka maññati bhikkhunī paṭiggaheti paṭiggaheti  
 3s.opt. adj.(m.s.Acc.) ppr.(f.s.Ins) f.s.Ins. grd.(m.s.Nom.) ger.

**給比丘尼的話，當比丘尼知道是急著(布施的布料)時，可以接受。接受後，  
 she is to accept it if she regards it as offered in urgency. Once she has accepted it,**

yāva cīvarakālasamayam nikkipitabbam. Tato ce uttari nikkihiyeyya,  
 直到 衣服 正時 時候 存放 那 如果 超過 存放  
 yāva cīvara+kāla+samaya nikkipati ta ce uttari nikkipati  
 adv. n. m. m.s.Acc. grd.(m.s.Nom.) s.Abl. conj. adv. 3s.opt.

**可以存放到適合(做)衣服的時候。如果存放超過那(時限)，  
 she may keep it throughout the robe season. Beyond that,**

nissaggiyam pācittiyam.  
 捨 懺  
 nissaggaiya pācittaika  
 adj.(f.s.Nom.) adj.(f.s.Nom.)

**犯捨懺。**

it is to be forfeited and confessed.

## 30.Pariṇatasikkhāpadam 轉移(僧團的物品轉為己有) (=Bhikkhu NP 30)

30. Yā pana bhikkhunī jānam saṅghikam lābhām pariṇataṁ attano pariṇāmeyya,  
 任何 比丘尼 知道 僧團 獲得物 已被轉移 自己 轉換  
 ya pana bhikkhunī jānatī saṅghika labhati pariṇamatī attan pariṇāmatī  
 f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom. m.s.Acc. m.s.Acc. m.s.Acc. pp.(m.s.Acc.) m.s.Dat. caus.3s.opt.

<sup>1</sup> 迦提：Kattikamāsa, 【陽】迦底迦月(月份名，於十月至十一月之間，農曆 9 月 16 至 10 月 15)。temāsi puṇṇamām (=timāsi puṇṇama)：第三個月的滿月，農曆 10 月 15。迦提月滿月(kattikapuṇṇamām)：10 月 1 至 15 日。

nissaggiyā pācittiyām.

捨	懺
nissaggaiya	pācittaika
adj.(f.s.Nom.)	adj.(f.s.Nom.)

**三十、若比丘尼明知而轉移供養僧團的物品給自己，犯捨懺。**

30. Should any bhikkhunī knowingly divert to herself gains that had been allocated for a Community, they are to be forfeited and confessed.

Pattavaggotatiyo.

Udditṭhā           kho,   ayyāyo,   timṣa   nissaggiyā pācittiyā dhammā.  
 詠                   大姐   三十   捨   懺   規則  
 uddisati           kho       timṣa   nissaggiya   dhamma   dhamma  
 pp.(m.p.Nom.) adv.   f.p.Voc.           m.p.Nom.   m.p.Nom.   m.p.Nom.

**諸大姐！三十捨懺的規則已經誦出了。**

The ladies, the Thirty Rules entailing Expiation with Forfeiture have been recited.

Tatthāyyāyo,   pucchāmi: Kacci'ttha   parisuddhā?  
 這裡   諸大姐   我問   是否   於此   清淨  
 tattha           pucchati   kacci   ettha   pp. of parisujjhati  
 adv.            f.p.Acc.    1s.pr.   ind.   adv.      m.p.Nom.

**在這裡我問諸大姐：「妳們於此(類戒)是否清淨？」**

Herein I ask the ladies : Are you pure in this?

Dutiyam'pi   pucchāmi: Kacci'ttha   parisuddhā?  
 第二 也   問   是否   於此   清淨  
 duttayaṁ + api   pucchati   kacci   ettha   pp. of parisujjhati  
 m.s.Acc.   ind.   1s.pr.   ind.   adv.      m.p.Nom.

**第二次我再問：「妳們於此(類戒)是否清淨？」**

For the second times I ask the ladies : Are you pure in this?

Tatiyam'pi   pucchāmi: Kacci'ttha   parisuddhā?  
 第三 也   問   是否   於此   清淨  
 tatiyaṁ + api   pucchati   kacci   ettha   pp. of parisujjhati  
 m.s.Acc.   ind.   1s.pr.   ind.   adv.      m.p.Nom.

**第三次再問：「妳們於此(類戒)是否清淨？」**

For the third times I ask the ladies : Are you pure in this?

Parisuddh'etth'āyyāyo, tasmā tunhī, evam etam dhārayāmīti.

清淨 在此 大姐 因此 沈默 如此 這 認為  
 parisuddhā+ettha ta tuṇhi evaṁ eta dharati + ti  
 pp.(m.p.Nom.) adv. f.p.Nom. m.s.Abl. adv. adv. m.s.Acc. 1s.pr.

**諸大姐於此(類戒)是清淨的，所以默然。我如此認定這件事。**

The ladies are pure herein; that is why they are silent. So do I record it.

~Nissaggiyapācittiyā niṭṭhitā.~

## Suddhapācittiyā(百六十六波逸提法)

Ime kho pan'āyyāyo, chasaṭṭhisatā pācittiyā dhammā uddesamā āgacchanti.  
 這些 又 大姐 百六十六 犯懺悔 規則 詩 聞  
 ima kho pana pācittiya dhamma uddesati āgacchati  
 m.p.Nom. adv. f.p.Voc. m.p.Nom. m.p.Nom. m.s.Acc. 3p.pr.

**諸大姐！現在到了誦出這百六十六懺悔戒。**

Now, the ladies, the one hundred sixty-six Rules entailing Expiation come up for recitation.

### Lasuṇavaggopāṭhamo 蒜品第一

#### \*1.Lasuṇasikkhāpadam(吃)蒜

1. Ya pana bhikkhunī lasuṇam khādeyya pācittiyam.  
 任何 比丘尼 蒜 吃食 犯懺悔  
 ya pana bhikkhunī lasuna khādati pācittiyam  
 f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom. n.s.Acc. 3s.opt. adj.(f.s.Nom.)

**一、若比丘尼，吃蒜<sup>1</sup>者，犯懺悔。**

1. Should any bhikkhunī eat garlic, it is to be confessed. [Cv.V.34.1]

#### \*2.Sambādhomasikkhāpadam(剃除)陰毛

2. Yā pana bhikkhunī sambādhe lomaṁ saṁharāpeyya, pācittiyam.  
 任何 比丘尼 密處、陰部 毛 剃除 犯懺悔  
 ya pana bhikkhunī sambādha loma saṁharāpeti pācittiyam  
 f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom. m.n.s.Loc. n.s.Acc. caus.3s.opt. adj.(f.s.Nom.)

**二、若比丘尼，剃除密處毛<sup>1</sup>者，犯懺悔。**

<sup>1</sup> Pāci.IV,259(CS:pg.340) : **Lasuṇam** nāma Māgadhakam vuccati.(蒜：摩揭陀國的(蒜)。) Anāpatti palaṇḍuke, bhañjanake, harītake, cāpalasuṇe, sūpasampāke, marīsasampāke, telasampāke, sālave, uttaribhaṅge, ummattikāya, ādikammikāyāti.(不犯：洋蔥(珠蔥，onion；Allium cepa)、打破的、呵梨勒果、奢婆蒜，湯之調料，肉之調料，油之調合物，(加入)伴菜，調味，癡狂者，最初之犯行者。)

2. Should any bhikkhunī have the hair in the “confining places” (armpits and pelvic areas) removed, it is to be confessed. [Cv.V.27.4]

### \*3.Talaghātakasikkhāpadam 掌摶

#### 3. Talaghātake pācittiyam.

掌摶 犯懺悔  
talaghātaka paccittiya  
n.s.Loc adj.(f.s.Nom.)

三、以掌打人<sup>2</sup>者，犯懺悔。

3. (Genital) slapping (even to the extent of consenting to a blow with a lotus-leaf) is to be confessed.

### \*4.Jatumaṭṭhakasikkhāpadam(使用)樹膠生支

#### 4. Jatumaṭṭhake pācittiyam.

紫膠 犯懺悔  
jatumaṭṭhaka paccittiya  
n.s.Loc adj.(f.s.Nom.)

四、使用樹膠生支<sup>3</sup>者，犯懺悔。

4. (The insertion of) a dildo is to be confessed.

### \*5.Udakasuddhikasikkhāpadam 以水洗淨(密處)

#### 5.Udakasuddhikam pana bhikkhuniyā ādiyamānāya dvangulapabbaparamam ādātabbam.

水 洗淨	比丘尼	抓取	二 指	關節	最多	應該拿
udaka+suddhika	bhikkhuni	ādiyati	dve + aṅgula + pabba + parama	n.	n	ādāti
n. adj.(f.s.Nom.)	adv.	f.s.Ins.	ppr.(f.s.Ins.)		adj.(f.s.Acc.)	pot.

#### Tam atikkāmentiyā, pācittiyam.

這 超過 犯懺悔  
ta atikkāmaya pācittiya  
m.s.Acc. adj.(f.s.Abl.) adj.(f.s.Nom.)

五、諸比丘尼以水洗淨(密處)<sup>4</sup>時，最多可入二指節，若過此者，犯懺悔。<sup>5</sup>

5. When a bhikkhunī is giving herself an ablution, is to be given only to the depth of two finger joints (and using no more than two fingers). Beyond that, it is to be confessed.

<sup>1</sup> Pāci.IV,260(CS:pg.341) : **Sambādho** nāma ubho upakacchakā, muttakaraṇam.(密處(陰部)：兩陰部，性器具。)《四分比丘尼戒本》(T22.1036.2)：「若比丘尼，剃三處毛者，波逸提。」

<sup>2</sup> Pāci.IV,261(CS:pg.342) : **Talaghātakam** nāma samphassarā sādiyantī antamaso uppala pattenapi muttakaraṇe pahāraṇ deti, āpatti pācittiyassa.(掌摶：接受觸(打)，乃至以蓮葉擊打。)

<sup>3</sup> Pāci.IV,261(CS:pg.343) : **Jatumaṭṭhakam** nāma jatumayaṇ katthamayaṇ piṭṭhamayaṇ mattikāmayāṇ.(樹膠生支(樹膠性具)：紫膠製的，木製的，(穀粒等的)麵粉製的，泥製的。)《四分比丘尼戒本》(T22.1036.2)：「若比丘尼，以胡膠作男根，波逸提。」

<sup>4</sup> Pāci.IV,262(CS:pg.344) : **Udakasuddhikam** nāma muttakaraṇassa dhovanā vuccati.(以水洗淨：以水洗淨性器官。)

<sup>5</sup> 《四分比丘尼戒本》(T22.1036.2)：「若比丘尼，以水作淨，應齊兩指各一節，若過者，波逸提。」

## \*6.Upatitthanasikkhāpadam 同候(作飯的比丘)

6.Yā pana bhikkhunī bhikkhussa bhuñjantassa pānīyena vā vidhūpanena vā upatiṭṭheyya, pācittiyam.

任何	比丘尼	比丘	食事	飲料	或	扇	或	同候	犯懺悔
ya	pana	bhikkhunī	bhikkhu	< ppr. of bhuñjati	pānīya	vidhūpana	upatiṭṭhati<(upa 近+ <b>thā</b> 站) paccittiya		
f.s.Nom.	adv.	f.s.Nom.	m.s.Gen.	n.s.Gen.	n.s.Ins.	n.s.Ins.	n.s.Ins.	3s.opt.	adj.(f.s.Nom.)

六、若比丘尼，以飲料或扇同候吃飯的比丘者，犯懺悔。

6. Should any bhikkhunī, when a bhikkhu is eating, attend on him with water or a fan, it is to be confessed.

## \*7.Āmakadhaññasikkhāpadam(乞或令乞)生穀

7.Yā pana bhikkhunī āmakadhaññam viññatvā vā viññāpetvā vā bhajjītvā vā bhajjāpetvā vā

任何	比丘尼	生的	穀粒	乞討	或	令乞討	或	烤、炒	或	令烤、炒	或
ya	pana	bhikkhunī	āmaka+dhañña	viññāti	viññāpeti	bhajjīti	bhajjāpeti				
f.s.Nom.	adv.	f.s.Nom.	adj.	n.s.Acc.	ger.	ger.caus.	ger.				ger.caus.

七、若比丘尼，乞或指使乞生穀，炒或指使炒，

7. Should any bhikkhunī, having requested raw grain or having had it requested, having roasted it or having had it roasted,

kotṭetvā vā kotṭāpetvā vā pacitvā vā pacāpetvā vā bhuñjeyya, pācittiyam.

搗、打	或	令搗	或	煮	或	令煮	或	食	犯懺悔
kotṭeti		kotṭāpeti		pacitvā		pacāpetvā		bhuñjeti	paccittiya
ger.		ger.caus.		ger.		ger.caus.		3s.opt.	adj.(f.s.Nom.)

搗或指使搗，煮或指使煮而食者，犯懺悔。

having pounded it or having had it pounded, having cooked it or having had it cooked, then eat it, it is to be confessed.

## \*8.Paṭhama-uccārachaḍḍanasikkhāpadam 棄大便(等)(1)

8. Yā pana bhikkhunī uccāram vā passāvam vā saṅkāram vā vighāsam vā tirokuṭṭe vā

任何	比丘尼	大便	或	小便	或	垃圾	或	剩飯	或	外牆	或
ya	pana	bhikkhunī	uccāra	passāva	saṅkāra	vighāsa	tiro+kuṭṭa				
f.s.Nom.	adv.	f.s.Nom.	m.s.Acc.	m. s.Acc.	m.s.Acc.	m.s.Acc.	m.s.Acc.				m.s.Loc.

八、若比丘尼，以大便、或小便、或垃圾、或剩飯，

tiropākāre vā chaddeyya vā chadḍāpeyya vā, pācittiyam.

外牆垣	或	棄	或	令棄	犯懺悔
tiro+pākāra		chadḍeti(< <b>chadḍ</b> )		chadḍāpeti	pācittiya
m.s.Loc.		3s.opt		caus. 3s.opt.	adj.(f.s.Nom.)

棄或指使棄於牆外或牆垣外者，犯懺悔。<sup>1</sup>

8. Should any bhikkhunī toss or get someone else to toss excrement or urine or trash or leftovers over a wall or a fence, it is to be confessed.

<sup>1</sup> Pāci.IV,266(CS:Pāci.pg.348)：「不犯：檢視之後才丟，丟棄於非道路之處，癡狂者，最初之犯行者。」

### \*9.Dutiya-uccārachaḍḍanasikkhāpadam 棄大便(等)(1)

9. Yā pana bhikkhunī uccāram vā passāvam vā saṅkāram vā vighāsam vā

任何	比丘尼	大便	或	小便	或	垃圾	或	剩餘飯菜	或
ya pana	bhikkhunī	uccāra		passāva		saṅkāra		vighāsa	
f.s.Nom.	adv.	m.s.Nom.		m. s.Acc.		m.s.Acc.		m.s.Acc.	

harite chaddeyya vā chadḍāpeyya vā, pācittiyam.

農作物	棄	或	令棄	犯懺悔
harita	chadḍeti		chadḍāpeti	paccittiya
n.s.Loc.	3s.opt.		caus. 3s.opt	adj.(f.s.Nom.)

**九、若比丘尼，丟棄小便、或大便、或垃圾、或剩餘飯菜於農作物<sup>1</sup>上，或指使棄者，犯懺悔。**

9. Should any bhikkhunī toss or get someone else to toss excrement or urine or trash or leftovers on living crops, it is to be confessed.

### \*10.Naccagītasikkhāpadam(往觀聽)舞蹈、唱歌

10. Yā pana bhikkhunī naccam vā gītam vā vāditam vā dassanāya gaccheyya, pācittiyam.

任何	比丘尼	舞蹈	或	歌謠	或	演奏	觀(聽)	去	犯懺悔
ya pana	bhikkhunī	nacca		gīta		vādita	dassana	gacchati	paccittiya
f.s.Nom.	adv.	n.s.Acc.		n.s.Acc.		n.s.Acc.	n.s.Dat.	3s.opt.	adj.(f.s.Nom.)

**十、若比丘尼，往觀聽舞蹈、唱歌或演奏<sup>2</sup>者，犯懺悔。**

10. Should any bhikkhunī go to see dancing or singing or instrument-playing, it is to be confessed. [Cv.V.2.6]

~Lasunavaggo paṭhamo niṭṭhito.~

## Rattandhakāravaggodutyo 暗夜品第二

### \*11.Rattandhakārasikkhāpadam 暗夜(與男人一對一站著交談)

11. Yā pana bhikkhunī rattandhakāre appadīpe purisena saddhiṁ

任何	比丘尼	夜	黑暗	少	燈光	男人	和
ya pana	bhikkhunī	ratta+	andhakāra	appa+dīpe	purisa		
f.s.Nom.	adv.	n.	m.s.Loc.	m.s.Loc.	m.s.Ins.		adv.

ekenekā santiṭheyya vā sallapeyya vā, pācittiyam.

一(男)對一(女)	站著	交談	犯懺悔
ekena + ekā	santiṭhati	sallapati	pācittiya
f.s.Ins.	3s.opt.	3s.opt.	adj.(f.s.Nom.)

<sup>1</sup> Pāci.IV,267(CS:Pāci.pg.349)：「農作物(harita)：七穀、豆類(等)，任何被人類種植使用的、受用的植物。」七穀即：sāli 米(泰國說「小麥」wheat)、vīhi 稻穀、yava 大麥(泰國說‘糯米’glutinous rice)、godhūma 小麥(泰國說‘野豌豆’tares)、kaṅgu 粽(或小米、粟 millet or sorghum)、varaka 豆(泰國說‘薏苡仁’Job’s tears)、kudrūsa 穀類)。

<sup>2</sup> Pāci.IV,267(CS:pg.351)：「舞蹈：任何舞蹈。唱歌：任何唱歌。演奏：任何演奏。」《增支部》(A.3.103.I,261.)：「諸比丘！於聖者之律，唱歌是哭泣。諸比丘！於聖者之律，跳舞是瘋子。」《四分律》卷第五十八(T22.998b)：「於聖法律中，歌戲猶如哭，舞如狂者。」《增支部》(A.5.209.III,251.)：「諸比丘！拉長歌音而誦(經)法有五種過患。什麼是五？(1)自己即愛著其音；(2)他人也愛著其音；(3)在家眾(聽到)發牢騷：我們這樣唱歌，這些釋迦沙門子也唱歌；(4)修練音調也會妨礙禪定；(5)往後的人會效法所看到的。」

## 十一、若比丘尼，在暗夜無燈中與男人一對一站著交談<sup>1</sup>者，犯懺悔。<sup>2</sup>

11. Should any bhikkhunī stand or converse with a man, one on one, in the darkness of the night without a light, it is to be confessed.

### \*12.Paṭicchannokāsasikkhāpadam 隱密處(與男人一對一站著)交談

12. Yā pana bhikkhunī paṭicchanne okāse purisena saddhim

任何	比丘尼	隱密	空間	男人	和	
ya	pana	bhikkhunī	<paṭicchādeti	okāsa	purisa	saddhim
f.s.Nom.	adv.	f.s.Nom.	n.s.Loc.	m.s.Loc.	m.s.Ins.	adv.

ekenekā santiṭheyya vā sallapeyya vā, pācittiyam.

一(男)對一(女)	站著	或	交談	或	犯懺悔
ekenekā	santiṭhati		sallapati	pācittiya	
f.s.Ins.	3s.opt.		3s.opt.	adj.(f.s.Nom.)	

## 十二、若比丘尼，在隱密處<sup>3</sup>與男人一對一站著交談者，犯懺悔。

12. Should any bhikkhunī stand or converse with a man, one on one, in a concealed place, it is to be confessed.

### \*13.Ajjhokāsasallapanasikkhāpadam 空地(與男子一對一站著)交談

13. Yā pana bhikkhunī ajjhokāse purisena saddhim ekenekā santiṭheyya vā sallapeyya vā, pācittiyam.

任何	比丘尼	露天	男人	和	一(男)對一(女)	站著	交談	犯懺悔
ya	pana	bhikkhunī	ajjhokāsa	purisa	ekenekā	santiṭhati	sallapati	pācittiya
f.s.Nom.	adv.	f.s.Nom.	m.s.Loc.	m.s.Nom.	adv.	f.s.Ins.	3s.opt.	adj.(f.s.Nom.)

## 十三、若比丘尼，在空地與男子一對一站著交談者，犯懺悔。

13. Should any bhikkhunī stand or converse with a man, one on one, in the open air, it is to be confessed.

### \*14.Dutiyika-uyyojanasikkhāpadam 打發友伴離去

14. Yā pana bhikkhunī rathikāya vā byūhe vā siṅghātake vā

任何	比丘尼	車道	死巷	十字路口	
ya	pana	bhikkhunī	rathikā	byūha	siṅghātaka
f.s.Nom.	adv.	f.s.Nom.	f.s.Loc.	m.s.Loc.	m.s.Loc.

purisena saddhim ekenekā santiṭheyya vā sallapeyya vā nikannikam vā jappeyya

男子	和	一對一	站著	交談	祕密地	耳語
purisa		ekena+ekā	santiṭhati	sallapeyya	nikannika	jappeyya
m.s.Ins.	adv.	f.s.Ins.	3s.opt.	3s.opt.	m.s.Nom.	3s.opt.

dutiyikam vā bhikkhuniṁ uyyojeyya, pācittiyam.

第二(=友伴)	比丘尼	離去	犯懺悔
dutiyikā	bhikkhunī	uyyojeti<uyyuñjati	pācittiya
f.s.Acc.	f.s.Acc.	caus.3s.opt.	adj.(f.s.Nom.)

<sup>1</sup> Pāci.IV,269(CS:pg.352) : **Sallapeyya** vāti purisassa hatthapāse ṛhitā sallapati .(交談：與男人在伸手所及之處交談。)

<sup>2</sup> 《四分比丘尼戒本》(T22.1036.3)：「若比丘尼與男子，共入闇室中者，波逸提。」

<sup>3</sup> Pāci.IV,269(CS:pg.353) : **Paṭicchanno** nāma okāso kutṭena vā kavāṭena vā kilāñjena vā sānipākārena vā rukkhena vā **thambhena** vā **kotthalijyā** vā yena kenaci paṭicchanno hoti.(隱密處：或圍牆，或窗戶，或草席，或(麻布製的)屏壁，或樹，或柱子，或粗布袋(sack?)，任何這些空間是隱密處。)

一四、若比丘尼，或在街道、或死巷、或十字路口，與男子一對一站著交談，或密談，或打發友伴比丘尼離去<sup>1</sup>者，犯懺悔。<sup>2</sup>

14. Should any bhikkhunī — along a road, in a cul-de-sac, or at a crossroads — stand or converse with a man one on one, or whisper in his ear, or dismiss the bhikkhunī who is her companion, it is to be confessed.

#### \*15. Anāpucchāpakkamanasikkhāpadam 不告(主人)而離去

15. Yā pana bhikkhunī purebhattām kulāni upasaṅkamitvā āsane nisīditvā

任何	比丘尼	食前、午前	俗家	往詣	座位	坐
ya pana	bhikkhunī	purebhatta	kula	upasaṅkamati	āsana	nisīdati
f.s.Nom.	adv. f.s.Nom.	n.s.Acc.	n.s.Acc.	ger.	n.s.Loc.	ger.

sāmike anāpucchā pakkameyya, pācittiyam.

主人	不問 (=未告知)	離去	犯懺悔
sāmika	an+apucchā	pakkamati	pācittiya
m.s.Acc.	ger.	3s.opt.	adj.(f.s.Nom.)

一五、若比丘尼，在食前至俗家坐於座位，不告主人而離去者，犯懺悔。

15. Should any bhikkhunī, having gone to family residences before the meal (before noon), having sat down on a seat, depart without taking the owner's leave, it is to be confessed.

#### \*16. Anāpucchā-abhinisīdanasikkhāpadam 不告(主人)而入座

16. Yā pana bhikkhunī pacchābhattām kulāni upasaṅkamitvā sāmike anāpucchā

任何	比丘尼	食前、午前	俗家	往詣	主人	不問
ya pana	bhikkhunī	purebhatta	kula	upasaṅkamati	sāmika	an+apucchā
f.s.Nom.	adv. f.s.Nom.	n.s.Acc.	n.s.Acc.	ger.	m.s.Acc.	ger.

āsane abhinisīdeyya vā abhinipajjeyya vā, pācittiyam.

座位	入坐	臥	犯懺悔
āsana	abhinisīdati	abhinipajjati	pācittiya
n.s.Loc.	3s.opt.	3s.opt.	adj.(f.s.Nom.)

一六、若比丘尼，在食後到俗家，不告主人而坐或臥者，犯懺悔。

16. Should any bhikkhunī, having gone to family residences after the meal (between noon and sunset), sit or lie down on a seat without asking the owner's permission, it is to be confessed.

#### \*17. Anāpucchāsantharaṇasikkhāpadam 不告(主人)而鋪床座

17. Yā pana bhikkhunī vikāle kulāni upasaṅkamitvā sāmike anāpucchā

<sup>1</sup> Pāci.IV,271(CS:pg.356) : Dutiyikām vā bhikkhuniṁ uyyojeyyāti anācāramā ācaritukāmā dutiyikampi bhikkhuniṁ uyyojeti. (打發第二位比丘尼：打發第二位比丘尼，(為了)做不正當的行爲，不正當之欲。)

<sup>2</sup> 《四分比丘尼戒本》(T22.1036.3)：「若比丘尼入村內與男子在屏處，共立共語，波逸提。」「若比丘尼與男子共入屏障處者，波逸提。」若比丘尼入村內巷陌中，遣伴遠去，在屏處與男子共立耳語者，波逸提。」

任何	比丘尼	非時	俗家	往詣	主人	不問
ya pana	bhikkhunī	vikāla	kula	upasaṅkamati	sāmika	an+apucchā
f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom.	m.s.Loc.	n.s.Acc.		ger.	m.s.Acc.	ger.

seyyam santharityvā vā santharāpetvā vā abhinisīdeyya vā abhinipajjeyya vā, pācittiyam.	或	坐	或	臥	或	犯懺悔
床、座	鋪	或	令鋪	或	abhinisīdati	abhinipajjati
seyyā	santharati		caus.ger.		3s.opt.	3s.opt.
f.s.Acc.	ger.					adj.(f.s.Nom.)

## 一七、若比丘尼，在非時<sup>1</sup>到俗家，不告主人而鋪床座或指使鋪床座而坐、臥者，犯懺悔。

17. Should any bhikkhunī, having gone to family residences in the wrong time (between sunset and dawn), having spread out bedding or having had it spread out, sit or lie down (there) without asking the owner's permission, it is to be confessed.

### \*18.Para-ujjhāpanakasikkhāpadam(因誤解、誤會而)激怒他人

18. Yā pana bhikkhunī duggahitena dūpadhāritena param ujjhāpeyya, pācittiyam.

任何	比丘尼	錯誤的瞭解	錯誤的理解	他人	激怒	犯懺悔
ya pana	bhikkhunī	duggahita	dūpadhārita	param	ujjhāpeti	paccittiya
f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom.	n.s.Ins.		pp.(n.s.Ins)	n.s.Acc.	3s.opt.	adj.(f.s.Nom.)

## 一八、若比丘尼，因誤解、誤會而激怒他人者，犯懺悔。

18. Should any bhikkhunī, because of a misapprehension, because of a misunderstanding, malign another (bhikkhunī), it is to be confessed.

### \*19.Para-abhisapanasikkhāpadam 咒詛他人

19. Yā pana bhikkhunī attānari vā parari vā nirayena vā brahmacariyena vā abhisapeyya, pācittiyam.

任何	比丘尼	自己	或	他人	或	地獄	或	梵行	或	咒詛	犯懺悔
ya pana	bhikkhunī	atta		para		niraya		brahmacariya		abhisapati	paccittiya
f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom.	s.Acc.	s.Acc.		m.s.Ins.				n.s.Ins.		3s.opt.	adj.(f.s.Nom.)

## 一九、若比丘尼，咒詛自己或他人生地獄、去梵行者，犯懺悔。<sup>2</sup>

19. Should any bhikkhunī curse herself or another (bhikkhunī) with regard to hell or the holy life, it is to be confessed.

### \*20.Rodanasikkhāpadam(打自己而)哭泣

20. Yā pana bhikkhunī attānam vadhitvā vadhitvā rodeyya, pācittiyam.

任何	比丘尼	自己	打、殺、處罰	打、殺	哭泣	犯懺悔
ya pana	bhikkhunī	atta	vadheti	vadheti	rodati	paccittiya
f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom.	s.Acc.		caus.ger.	caus.ger.	3s.opt.	adj.(f.s.Nom.)

## 二〇、若比丘尼，打自己而哭泣者，犯懺悔。

<sup>1</sup> Pāci.IV,166(CS:Pāci.pg.216)：「非時：已過中午，到(隔日)天亮。」

<sup>2</sup> 《四分比丘尼戒本》(T22.1036.3)：「若比丘尼有小因緣事，便咒詛：墮三惡道，不生佛法中！若我有如是事，墮三惡道，不生佛法中！若汝有如是事，亦墮三惡道，不生佛法中！波逸提。」

20. Should any bhikkhunī weep, beating and beating herself, it is to be confessed.

~Rattandhakāravaggo dutiyo niṭṭhito.~

## Naggavaggotatiyo 裸體品第三

\*21.Naggasikkhāpadam 裸體(沐浴)

21. Yā pana bhikkhunī naggā nahāyeyya, pācittiyaṁ.

任何	比丘尼	裸體	沐浴	犯懺悔
ya	pana	bhikkhunī	naggā	nahāyati
f.s.Nom.	adv.	f.s.Nom.	adj.(f.s.Acc.)	3s.opt.
				adj.(f.s.Nom.)

二一、若比丘尼，裸體沐浴者，犯懺悔。

21. Should any bhikkhunī bathe naked, it is to be confessed. [See Mv.VIII.28 & Cv.V.16.2]

22.Udakasātikasikkhāpadam 沐浴衣(=Bhikkhu P 91)

22.Udakasātikām pana bhikkhuniyā kārayamānāya pamāṇikā kāretabbā,

水 衣	比丘尼	使製作	按照尺寸	應使作
udaka+sātika	bhikkhunī	kāreti	pamāṇikā	karoti
n. adj.(f.s.Nom.)	f.s.Acc.	caus.ppr.(f.s.Ins.)	f.s.Nom.	caus.grd.(f.s.Ins.)

tatr' idam pamāṇam dīghaso catasso vidatthiyo Sugatavidatthiyā, tiriyaṁ dve vidatthiyo.  
 那裡 這 量、尺寸 長 四 張手 善逝 張手 寬 二 張手  
 tatra+idam pamāṇa dīghaso catasso vidatthi Sugata + vidatthi tiriyaṁ dve vidatthiyo  
 adv. n.s.Nom. n.s.Nom. m.s.Abl. f.p.Nom. f.p.Nom. f.s.Ins. n.s.Acc. f.p.Nom. f.p.Nom.

Tam atikkāmentiyā chedanakām pācittiyaṁ.

這	超過	切除	犯懺悔
ta	atikkāmaya	chedaka	pācittiya
m.s.Acc.	adj.(f.s.Abl.)	m.s.Acc.	adj.(f.s.Nom.)

二二、比丘尼作沐浴衣時，應依尺寸作，即依善逝張手<sup>1</sup>，長四張手、寬二張手，

若超過尺寸者，犯懺悔，應切斷之。<sup>2</sup>

22. When a bhikkhunī is making a bathing cloth, it is to be made to the standard measurement. Here the standard is this: four spans — using the Sugata span — in length, two spans in width. In excess of that, it is to be cut down and confessed.

\*23.Cīvarasibbanasikkhāpadam(拆解某比丘尼衣之後)縫衣

23.Yā pana bhikkhunī bhikkhuniyā cīvaraṁ visibbetvā vā visibbāpetvā vā

任何	比丘尼	比丘尼	衣	拆線	或	令拆線	或
ya	pana	bhikkhunī	bhikkhunī	cīvara	visibbeti	visibbāpeti	
f.s.Nom.	adv.	f.s.Nom.	f.s.Acc.	n.s.Acc.	ger.	ger.caus.	

<sup>1</sup> 張手(vidatthi)：表示張開的大拇指和中指兩端的距離，大概九英吋。善逝一張手(Sugata-vidatthi)，等於中等身材的人之張手的三倍。

<sup>2</sup> 《四分比丘尼戒本》(T22.1037.1)：「若比丘尼作浴衣，應量作，應量作者，長佛六疊手，廣二疊手半，若過者波逸提。」

sā pacchā anantarāyikinī neva sibbeyya,  
 該尼 之後 無 障難 沒有 縫製  
 ta pacchā an+antarāyikinī na+eva sibbeyya  
 f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom. adv. 3s.opt.

na sibbāpanāya ussukkam kareyya aññatra catūhapañcāhā, pācittiyam.  
 不 令縫製 努力、熱心 作 別的 四 日 五 日 犯懺悔  
 sibbāpanāya ussukka karoti aññatra catū+aha+pañca+āhā pācittiya  
 caus.(3s.opt.) n.s.Acc. 3s.opt. adv. n.p.Acc. adj.(f.s.Nom.)

### 二三、若比丘尼，拆解或指使拆解某比丘尼的衣之後，若該尼沒有障難，不予縫製，也不請人縫製而盡力，過四五日者，犯懺悔。

23. Should any bhikkhunī, having unsewn (another) bhikkhunī's robe or having had it unsewn, and then later — when there are no obstructions — neither sew it nor make an effort to have it sewn within four or five days, it is to be confessed.

\*24. Saṅghāticārasikkhāpadam(過五日,不)穿僧伽梨

24. Yā pana bhikkhunī pañcāhikam saṅghāticāram atikkāmeyya, pācittiyam.  
 任何 比丘尼 五日 僧伽梨 動作 超過 犯懺悔  
 ya pana bhikkhunī pañcāhika saṅghāti + cāraṁ atikkamati pācittiya  
 f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom. adj.(f.s.Acc.) f. adj.(f.s.Acc.) 3s.opt. adj.(f.s.Nom.)

### 二四、若比丘尼，若不穿僧伽梨，過五日者，犯懺悔。<sup>1</sup>

24. Should any bhikkhunī exceed her five-day outer robe period, it is to be confessed.

\*25. Cīvaraśaṅkamanīyasikkhāpadam 穿著不能確定之衣

25. Yā pana bhikkhunī cīvaraśaṅkamanīyam dhāreyya, pācittiyam.  
 任何 比丘尼 衣 不能確定 穿著、戴著 犯懺悔  
 ya pana bhikkhunī cīvara + saṅkati (**saṅk** 懷疑) dhāreti pācittiya  
 f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom. n. grd.ppr.(3s.opt.) 3s.opt. adj.(f.s.Nom.)

### 二五、若比丘尼，穿他人之衣<sup>2</sup>者，犯懺悔。

25. Should any bhikkhunī wear a robe that should be given back (one that she has borrowed from another bhikkhunī without asking her permission), it is to be confessed.

\*26. Gaṇacīvaraśikkhāpadam 妨礙大眾(得衣)

26. Yā pana bhikkhunī gaṇassa cīvaralābhām antarāyam kareyya, pācittiyam.  
 任何 比丘尼 大眾 衣 得 妨礙 作 犯懺悔  
 ya pana bhikkhunī gaṇa cīvara + lābhām antarāya karoti pācittiya

<sup>1</sup> 《四分比丘尼戒本》(T22.1037.1)：「若比丘尼過五日，不看僧伽梨，波逸提。」

<sup>2</sup> Pāci.IV,282(CS:pg.371)：「**他人之衣**：已持有五種衣，之外，偷竊他人之衣，或不查問，就穿著或覆蓋，犯罪、犯懺悔。」

f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom. m.s.Gen. n. adj.(f.s.Acc.) m.s.Acc. 3s.opt. adj.(f.s.Nom.)

## 二六、若比丘尼，妨礙大眾得衣者，犯懺悔。<sup>1</sup>

26. Should any bhikkhunī put an obstruction in the way of a group's receiving robe-cloth, it is to be confessed.

### \*27.Paṭibāhanasikkhāpadam 阻擋(如法分配衣)

27. Yā pana bhikkhunī dhammikām cīvaravibhaṅgam paṭibāheyya, pācittiyam.

任何	比丘尼	如法	衣	分配	擋住	犯懺悔
ya	pana	bhikkhunī	dhammika	cīvara + vibhaṅga	paṭibāhati	paccittiya
f.s.Nom.	adv.	f.s.Nom.	adj.(m.s.Acc.)	m.	m.s.Acc.	3s.opt.
						adj.(f.s.Nom.)

## 二七、若比丘尼，阻擋如法分配衣者，犯懺悔。<sup>2</sup>

27. Should any bhikkhunī block a robe-cloth distribution that is in accordance with the rule, it is to be confessed.

### \*28.Cīvaradānasikkhāpadam 贈衣(給無家者等)

28. Yā pana bhikkhunī agārikassa vā paribbājakassa vā paribbājikāya vā

任何	比丘尼	無家者	或	遍行者	或	女遍行者	或
ya	pana	bhikkhunī	agārika	paribbājaka	paribbājikā		
f.s.Nom.	adv.	f.s.Nom.	m.s.Gen.	m.s.Gen.	f.s.Gen.		

samaṇacīvaram dadeyya, pācittiyam.

沙門	衣	給	犯懺悔
samaṇa+cīvara	dadāti	pācittiya	
m.	n.s.Acc.	3s.opt.	adj.(f.s.Nom.)

## 二八、若比丘尼，贈衣給沙門無家者、遍行者或女遍行者，犯懺悔。

28. Should any bhikkhunī give a contemplative robe (a robe that has been marked so as to be allowable for a bhikkhu or bhikkhunī) to a householder, a male wanderer, or female wanderer, it is to be confessed.

### \*29.Kāla-atikkamanasikkhāpadam(期待未確定之衣而)過衣時

29. Yā pana bhikkhunī dubbalacīvarapaccāsāya cīvarakālasamayarū atikkāmeyya, pācittiyam.

任何	比丘尼	微弱的	衣	期待	衣	時	時間	超過	犯懺悔
ya	pana	bhikkhunī	dubbalā+cīvara+paccāsāya	cīvara+kāla+samaya	atikkamati	paccittiya			
f.s.Nom.	adv.	f.s.Nom.	adj.	n.	f.s.Ins.	m.	m.s.Acc.	3s.opt.	adj.(f.s.Nom.)

## 二九、若比丘尼，期待未確定之衣而過衣時者，犯懺悔。

29. Should any bhikkhunī let the robe-season (the period for receiving kāthina-donations) pass on the basis of a weak expectation for cloth, it is to be confessed.

### \*30.Kathinuddhārasikkhāpadam(阻擋如法)取消迦緇那(利益)

30. Yā pana bhikkhunī dhammikām kathinuddhāram paṭibāheyya, pācittiyam.

<sup>1</sup> 《四分比丘尼戒本》(T22.1037.1)：「若比丘尼與眾僧衣，作留難者，波逸提。」

<sup>2</sup> 《四分比丘尼戒本》(T22.1037.2)：「若比丘尼作如是意，眾僧如法分衣，遮令不分，恐弟子不得者，波逸提。」

任何	比丘尼	如法	迦繕那衣	取消(利益)	擋住	犯懺悔
ya pana bhikkhunī	f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom.	dhammika	kathina+ uddhāra	m. m.s.Acc.	paṭibāhati	paccittiya

三〇、若比丘尼，阻擋如法取消迦繕那利益者，犯懺悔。

30. Should any bhikkhunī block the dismantling of the kathina privileges in accordance with the rule, it is to be confessed.

~Naggavaggoṭatiyo niṭṭhito.~

## Tuvaṭṭavaggocatuttho 分享品第四

\*31.Ekamañcatuvaṭṭanasikkhāpadam(兩人)同睡一床

31. Yā pana bhikkhuniyo dve ekamañce tuvaṭṭeyyūm, pācittiyam.
任何 比丘尼 二(人) 一 床 分享 犯懺悔 ya pana bhikkhunī dve eka + mañce tuvaṭṭeti paccittiya f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom. m.s.Loc. 3s.opt. adj.(f.s.Nom.)

三一、若比丘尼，若兩人同睡一床者，犯懺悔。<sup>1</sup>

31. Should two bhikkhunīs share a single bed, it is to be confessed. [Cv.V.19.2]

\*32.Ekattharaṇatuvaṭṭanasikkhāpadam(兩人)同蓋一被

32. Yā pana bhikkhuniyo dve ekattharaṇapāvuraṇā tuvaṭṭeyyūm, pācittiyam.
任何 比丘尼 二(人) 一 鋪設 毛毯、被褥 分享 犯懺悔 ya pana bhikkhunī dve eka + tharaṇa + pāvuraṇā tuvaṭṭeti paccittiya f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom. n. n.s.Acc. 3s.opt. adj.(f.s.Nom.)

三二、若比丘尼，若兩人同蓋一被者，犯懺悔。

32. Should two bhikkhunīs share a single blanket or sleeping mat, it is to be confessed. [Cv.V.19.2]

\*33.Aphāsukaraṇasikkhāpadam(對比丘尼故意)惱亂

33. Yā pana bhikkhunī bhikkhuniyā sañcicca aphāsumū kareyya, pācittiyam.
任何 比丘尼 比丘尼 故意 不安樂 作 犯懺悔 ya pana bhikkhunī bhikkhunī sañcicca aphāsu karoti paccittiya f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom. f.s.Acc. adv. m.s.Acc. 3s.opt. adj.(f.s.Nom.)

三三、若比丘尼，對比丘尼故意惱亂者，犯懺悔。

33. Should any bhikkhunī intentionally cause annoyance to (another) bhikkhunī, it is to be confessed.

\*34.Na-upaṭṭhāpanasikkhāpadam 不伺候(同住之生病比丘尼)

34. Yā pana bhikkhunī dukkhitam sahajīvinim neva upaṭṭhaheyya,
任何 比丘尼 生病的 同生活的(比丘尼) 不 又 伺候 ya pana bhikkhunī dukkha sahajīvinī neva upaṭṭhahati

<sup>1</sup> 《四分比丘尼戒本》(T22.1036.3)：「若比丘尼共一蓐，同一被臥，除餘時，波逸提。」

f.s.Nom. adv.	f.s.Nom.	adj.(f.s.Acc.)	f.s.Acc.	3s.opt.	ger.
---------------	----------	----------------	----------	---------	------

na upatṭhāpanāya ussukkarāñ kareyya, pācittiyām.

不	令伺候	努力、熱心	作	犯懺悔
na	upatṭhapeti	ussukka	karoti	pācittiya
	ger.caus.	n.s.Acc.	3s.opt.	adj.(f.s.Nom.)

### 三四、若比丘尼，不伺候又不找人伺候同住<sup>1</sup>之生病比丘尼者，犯懺悔。

34. Should any bhikkhunī not attend to her ailing student nor make an effort to have her attended to, it is to be confessed. [See Cv.VIII.12.2]

\*35. Nikkadḍhanasikkhāpadam(給住屋後，瞋怒不喜即趕走)

35. Yā pana bhikkhunī bhikkhuniyā upassayaṁ datvā kūpitā anattamanā  
 任何 比丘尼 比丘尼 住所 級了 生氣 不 適意  
 ya pana bhikkhunī bhikkhunī upassaya dadāti kūpita an+attama  
 f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom. f.s.Acc. m.s.Acc. ger. adj.(f.s.Nom.) adj.(f.s.Nom.)

nikkadḍheyā vā nikkadḍhāpeyya vā, pācittiyām.

趕走	或	令趕走	或	犯懺悔
nikkadḍhati		nikkadḍhāpeti		pācittiya
3s.opt.		caus.3s.opt.		adj.(f.s.Nom.)

### 三五、若比丘尼，給比丘尼住屋後，瞋怒不喜即趕走或指使趕走者，犯懺悔。

35. Should any bhikkhunī, having given living space to another bhikkhunī, then — angry and displeased — evict her or have her evicted, it is to be confessed.

\*36. Samṣaṭṭhasikkhāpadam(與居士)住得親近

36. Yā pana bhikkhunī samṣaṭṭhā vihareyya gahapatinā vā gahapatiputta vā,  
 任何 比丘尼 親近 住 居士 或 居士 子 或  
 ya pana bhikkhunī samṣaṭṭhā viharati gahapati gahapati+putta  
 f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom. pp.(f.s.Nom.) 3s.opt. m.s.Ins. m. m.s.Ins.

### 三六、若比丘尼，若與居士或居士子住得親近者，

36. Should any bhikkhunī live entangled with a householder or a householder's son,

sā bhikkhunī bhikkhunīhi evamassa vacanīyā “māyye, samṣaṭṭhā vihari gahapatināpi  
 那 比丘尼 比丘尼 如是 說 勿 大姐 親近 住 居士 及  
 ya bhikkhunī bhikkhunī evam + atthi vacanīyā mā ayye samṣaṭṭha viharati gahapati + pi  
 f.s.Nom.f.s.Nom. f.p.Acc. adv. 3s.opt. grd.(f.s.Nom.) f.s.Voc. pp. 2s.aor. m.s.Ins.

諸比丘尼應對讓比丘尼這樣說：「大姐！勿與居士

the bhikkhunīs are to admonish her thus: “Lady, don't live

gahapatiputtenāpi, viviccañye, vivekaññeva bhaginiyā saṅgho vañnetī”ti.  
 居士 子 及 分離 大姐 遠離 其他 姐妹 僧團 評論

<sup>1</sup> Pāci.IV,291(CS:Pāci.pg.383)：「同住(同生活)：住在同一尼精舍。」

gahapati +putta + pi viviccati ayye viveka+añña+ eva bhaginī saṅgha vanṇeti ti  
m. m.s.Ins. 2s.pr. f.s.Voc. m. adj. f.s.Abl. m.s.Nom. 3s.pr.

及居士子住得親近。大姐！僧團評判妳離開，遠離其他的姐妹。」

entangled with a householder or a householder's son. Live alone, lady. The Community recommends strict isolation for the lady."

Evañca sā bhikkhunī bhikkhunīhi vuccamānā tath'eva paggañheyya,  
如此 而 這 比丘尼 比丘尼 勸告 如此 仍 努力  
ta bhikkhunī bhikkhunī <vucati tathā paggañhati  
adv. f.s.Nom. f.s.Nom. f.p.Ins. ppr.(f.s.Nom.) adv. 3s.opt.

而該比丘尼被諸比丘尼這樣勸告時，仍然那樣堅持，

And should that bhikkhunī, thus admonished, persist as before,

sā bhikkhunī bhikkhunīhi yāvatatiyam samanubhāsitabbā  
這 比丘尼 比丘尼 直到 第三 勸告  
sa bhikkhunī bhikkhunī yāva +tatiyam samanubhāsati  
f.s.Nom. f.s.Nom. f.p.Ins. adv. grd.(f.s.Nom.)

諸比丘尼應該乃至三次勸告這位比丘尼去放棄那(主張)。

the bhikkhunīs are to rebuke her up to three times so as to desist.

yāvatatiyam samanubhāsitabbā tassa paṭinissaggāya, yāvatatiyañce samanubhāsiyamānā  
直到 第三 勸告 它 捨棄 直到 第三 如果 勸  
yāva +tatiyam samanubhāsita ta paṭinissagga yāva +tatiyam +ce samanubhāsati  
adv. grd.(f.s.Nom.) m.s.Gen. m.s.Dat. adv. ppr.(f.s.Nom.)

如果到了第三次被勸告時，

If while being rebuked up to three times

tam paṭinissajjeyya, icce'tam kusalam. No ce paṭinissajjeyya, pācittiyan.  
這(=它) 捨棄 如此 這 善 不 如果 捨棄 犯懺悔  
ta paṭinissajjati ta kusala paṭinissajjati pācittiya  
m.s.Acc. 3s.opt. n.s.Nom. n.s.Nom. 3s.opt. adj.(f.s.Nom.)

(她)放棄它，那就好。如果不捨棄，犯懺悔。

by the bhikkhunīs she desists, that is good. If she does not desist, it is to be confessed.

### \*37. Antorat̄hasikkhāpadam 在國內(有危險,卻不結伴而行)

37.Yā pana bhikkhunī antorat̄ha sāsaṅkasammate sappaṭibhaye asatthikā cārikam careyya, pācittiyan.  
任何 比丘尼 國內 她 呈現的 已知 有 恐怖 不 商隊 遊行 行 犯懺悔  
ya pana bhikkhunī antorat̄ha sā + saṅkasa+mata sa+paṭibhaya a+satthika cārikā carati paccittiya  
f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom. n.s.Loc. f.s.Nom. adj. pp.(n.s.Loc.) n.s.Loc. adj.(f.s.Acc.) f.s.Acc. 3s.opt. adj.(f.s.Nom.)

三七、若比丘尼，若在國內，她知道有危險<sup>1</sup>，卻不跟遊走的商隊走者，犯懺悔。

<sup>1</sup> Pāci.IV,295(CS:pg.388)：「在國內：在該比丘尼的王國，她的國家。她知道有危險：她曾看過在道上有強盜潛藏，(在那裡)吃、住、坐、臥。」

37. Should any bhikkhunī, without joining a caravan of merchants, set out within the local king's territory on a journey considered dubious and risky, it is to be confessed.

### \*38.Tiroratthaśikkhāpadam 在國外(有危險,卻不結伴而行)

38. Yā pana bhikkhunī tiroratthaśikkhāpadam sappaṭibhaye asatthikā cārikām careyya, pācittiyam.

任何	比丘尼	外國	她	呈現的	已知	有	恐怖	不	商隊	遊行	行	犯懺悔
ya	pana	bhikkhunī	tirorattha	sā+sañkasa+mata	sa+paṭibhaya	a+satthikā	cārikā	carati	paccittiya			
f.s.Nom.	adv.	f.s.Nom.	n.s.Loc.	f.s.Nom.	adj. pp.(n.s.Loc.)	n.s.Loc.	adj.(f.s.Acc.)	f.s.Acc.	3s.opt.	adj.(f.s.Nom.)		

三八、若比丘尼，若在國外，她知道有危險，卻不跟遊走的商隊走者，犯懺悔。

38. Should any bhikkhunī, without joining a caravan of merchants, set out outside the local king's territory on a journey considered dubious and risky, it is to be confessed.

### \*39.Antovassasikkhāpadam 於雨期中遊行

39. Yā pana bhikkhunī antovassam cārikām careyya, pācittiyam.

任何	比丘尼	內	雨季	遊行	行	犯懺悔
ya	pana	bhikkhunī	anto+vassa	cārikā	careyya	paccittiya
f.s.Nom.	adv.	f.s.Nom.	m.s.Acc.	f.s.Acc.	3s.opt.	adj.(f.s.Nom.)

三九、若比丘尼，若於雨期中<sup>1</sup>遊行者，犯懺悔。<sup>2</sup>

39. Should any bhikkhunī set out on a journey during the Rains-residence, it is to be confessed. [Mv.III.3.2]

### \*40.Cārikanapakkamanasikkhāpadam(雨安居後,)不出遊行

40. Yā pana bhikkhunī vassamvuṭṭhā cārikām na pakkameyya

任何	比丘尼	雨	下雨	遊行	不	走開
ya	pana	bhikkhunī	vassa+<vassati	cārikā	pakkamati	
f.s.Nom.	adv.	f.s.Nom.	m. pp.(f.s.Acc.)	f.s.Acc.	3s.opt.	

antamaso chappañcayojanānipi, pācittiyam.

乃至	六	五	由旬	也	犯懺悔
cha+pañca+yojana	+ pi		paccittiya		
adv.		n.s.Acc.	ind.	adj.(f.s.Nom.)	

四〇、若比丘尼，雨安居結束<sup>3</sup>後，若不出去遊走五六由旬，犯懺悔。

40. Should any bhikkhunī, having completed the Rains-residence, not depart on a journey of at least five or six leagues, it is to be confessed.

~Tuvatṭavaggo catuttho niṭṭhito.~

<sup>1</sup> Pāci.IV,297(CS:pg.389)：「雨期中：前三個月，或後三個月沒有安居。」

<sup>2</sup> 《四分比丘尼戒本》(T22.1037.1)：「若比丘尼春夏冬一切時人間遊行，除餘因緣者，波逸提。」

<sup>3</sup> Pāci.IV,297(CS:pg.391)：「雨安居結束：前三個月，或後三個月雨安居結束。」

## Cittāgāravaggopāñcamo 畫室品第五

### \*41.Rājāgārasikkhāpadam 參觀王宮(等)

41. Yā pana bhikkhunī rājāgāram vā cittāgāram vā ārāmam vā  
 任何 比丘尼 王宮 或 繪畫堂 或 公園 或  
 ya pana bhikkhunī rāja+agāra citta+ agāra ārāma  
 f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom. m. n.s.Acc. n. n.s.Acc. m.s.Acc.

uyyānam vā pokkharanīm vā dassanāya gaccheyya, pācittiyam.  
 園林 或 蓮池 或 觀看 去 犯懺悔  
 uyyāna pokkharanī dassana gacchati pācittiya  
 n.s.Acc. f.s.Acc. n.s.Acc. 3s.opt. adj.(f.s.Nom.)

**四一、若比丘尼，若去參觀王宮、或畫室、或公園、或園林、或蓮池者，犯懺悔。**

41. Should any bhikkhunī go to see a royal pleasure house or a picture gallery (any building decorated for amusement) or a park or a pleasure grove or a lotus pond, it is to be confessed.

### \*42.Āsandiparibhuñjanasikkhāpadam 享用長椅(等)

42. Yā pana bhikkhunī āsandim vā pallañkam vā paribhuñjeyya, pācittiyam.  
 任何 比丘尼 長椅 或 裝飾尾毛的床 或 享用 犯懺悔  
 ya pana bhikkhunī āsandi pallañka paribhuñjati paccittiya  
 f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom. f.s.Acc. m.s.Acc. 3s.opt. adj.(f.s.Nom.)

**四二、若比丘尼，享用長椅<sup>1</sup>或裝飾尾毛的床<sup>2</sup>者，犯懺悔。**

42. Should any bhikkhunī make use of a dais or a throne, it is to be confessed. [Cv.VI.8]

### \*43.Suttakantanasikkhāpadam 紡紗

43. Yā pana bhikkhunī suttam kanteyya, pācittiyam.  
 任何 比丘尼 紗、線 編織 犯懺悔  
 ya pana bhikkhunī sutta kantati paccittiya  
 f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom. n.s.Acc. 3s.opt. m.s.Nom.

**四三、若比丘尼，若紡紗者，犯懺悔。**

43. Should any bhikkhunī spin yarn (thread), it is to be confessed.

### \*44.Gihiveyyāvaccasikkhāpadam 為在家人作事

44. Yā pana bhikkhunī gihiveyyāvaccaṁ kareyya, pācittiyam.  
 任何 比丘尼 在家 作事、服務 作 犯懺悔  
 ya pana bhikkhunī gihi + veyyāvacca karoti paccittiya

<sup>1</sup> Pāci.IV,299 (CS:pg.393) : **Āsandī** nāma atikkantappamāṇā vuccati.(長椅：超大尺寸的椅子。)

<sup>2</sup> Pāci.IV,299 (CS:pg.393) : **Pallañko** nāma āharimehi vālehi kato hoti.(裝飾尾毛的床：綺麗的、裝飾尾毛的(床)。)

f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom. m. n.s.Acc. 3s.opt. adj.(f.s.Nom.)

**四四、若比丘尼，為在家人作事，犯懺悔。**

44. Should any bhikkhunī do a chore for a lay person, it is to be confessed.

#### \*45. Adhikaraṇasikkhāpadam 平息(諍事)

45. Yā pana bhikkhunī bhikkhuniyā “ehāyye, imām adhikaraṇām vūpasamehī”ti vuccamānā

任何 ya	比丘尼 pana	比丘尼 bhikkhunī	來 ehi+	大姐 ayye	這 ima	諍事 adhikarana	滅、平息 vūpasameti	勸請 + ti <vucati
f.s.Nom.	adv. f.s.Nom.	f.s.Acc.	imp. of eti	f.s.Voc.	n.s.Acc.	n.s.Acc.	2s.imp.	ppr.(f.s.Nom.)

“sādhū”ti paṭissuṇītvā sā pacchā anantarāyikinī neva vūpasameyya,  
 好、妥善 sādhū ti 允諾 paṭissuṇītvā 該尼 ta 之後 pacchā 無障難 an+antarāyikinī 沒有 平息  
 sādhū 3s.opt. paṭissuṇītvā ger. f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom. na+eva vūpasameti  
 f.s.Nom. n.s.Acc. 3s.opt. adj.(f.s.Nom.) 3s.opt.

na vūpasamāya ussukkam kareyya, pācittiyam.

平息 vūpasama	努力、熱心 ussukka	作 karoti	犯懺悔 pācittiya
m.s.Ins.	n.s.Acc.	3s.opt.	adj.(f.s.Nom.)

**四五、若比丘尼，受比丘尼之請託：「大姐！請來息諍。」(應諾：)「好！」而後沒有障難，卻沒有去平息，也不盡力行事者，犯懺悔。**

45. Should any bhikkhunī — when told by a bhikkhunī, “Come, lady. Help settle this issue,” and having answered, “Very well” — then, when there are no obstructions, neither settle it nor make an effort to have it settled, it is to be confessed.

#### 46. Bhojanadānasikkhāpadam(親手)給食(=Bhikkhu P 41)

46. Yā pana bhikkhunī agārikassa vā paribbājakassa vā paribbājikāya vā sahatthā

任何 ya	比丘尼 pana	無家者 agārika	或 adj.(n.s.Dat.)	男遍行者 paribbājaka	或 m.s.Dat.	女遍行者 paribbājikā	或 f.s.Dat.	自手 sa+hattha
f.s.Nom.	adv. f.s.Nom.							m.s.Ins.

khādanīyam vā bhojanīyam vā dadeyya, pācittiyam.

硬食 khādanīya	或 軟食 bhojanīya	或 純食 dadati	給予 pācittiya	犯懺悔
n.s.Acc.	n.s.Acc.	3s.opt.	adj.(f.s.Nom.)	

**四六、若比丘尼，親手送硬食、軟食給無家者、或男遍行者、女遍行者，犯懺悔。**

46. Should any bhikkhunī give, with her own hand, staple or non-staple food to a householder, a male wanderer, or a female wanderer, it is to be confessed. [See Bhikkhus' Pācittiya 41]

#### \*47. Āvasathacīvarasikkhāpadam 月華衣(繼續使用)

47. Yā pana bhikkhunī āvasathacīvaraṁ anissajjetvā paribhuñjeyya, pācittiyam.

任何 ya	比丘尼 pana	住所 āvasatha	衣(=月華衣) + cīvara	不 a	放棄 <nissajati	使用 paribhuñjati	犯懺悔 pācittiya
f.s.Nom.	adv. f.s.Nom.	m.	n.s.Acc.		ger.	3s.opt.	m.s.Nom.

四七、若比丘尼，不丟掉月華衣<sup>1</sup>而(繼續)使用者，犯懺悔。

47. Should any bhikkhunī use a menstrual cloth without having forfeited it (after her previous period), it is to be confessed.

#### \*48.Āvasathavihārasikkhāpadam 不捨住處(而出遊)

48. Yā pana bhikkhunī āvasathām anissajjītvā cārikām pakkameyya, pācittiyam.

任何	比丘尼	住處	不 放棄	遊行	離開	犯懺悔	
ya	pana	bhikkhunī	āvasatha	a+ <nissajati	cārikā	pakkamatī	pācittiyā
f.s.Nom.	adv.	f.s.Nom.	m.s.Acc.	ger.	f.s.Acc.	3s.opt.	adj.(f.s.Nom.)

四八、若比丘尼，若不捨住處而出遊者，犯懺悔。

48. Should any bhikkhunī depart on a journey without having forfeited her dwelling space, it is to be confessed. [See Bhikkhus' Pācittiya 15]

#### \*49.Tiracchānavijjāpariyāpuṇanasikkhāpadam 遍學畜生咒

49. Yā pana bhikkhunī tiracchānavijjam pariyāpuṇeyya, pācittiyam.

任何	比丘尼	畜生	明咒、技藝	徹底地學習	犯懺悔
ya	pana	bhikkhunī	tiracchāna + vijjā	pariyāpuṇāti	pācittiyā
f.s.Nom.	adv.	f.s.Nom.	m.	3s.opt.	adj.(f.s.Nom.)

四九、若比丘尼，遍學畜生咒<sup>2</sup>者，犯懺悔。<sup>3</sup>

49. Should any bhikkhunī study lowly arts (literally, bestial knowledge), it is to be confessed. [Cv.V.33.2 — for a list of lowly arts, see DN 2]

#### \*50.Tiracchānavijjāvācanasikkhāpadam 教畜生咒

50. Yā pana bhikkhunī tiracchānavijjam vāceyya, pācittiyam.

任何	比丘尼	畜生	明咒、技藝	教讀	犯懺悔
ya	pana	bhikkhunī	tiracchāna + vijjā	vāceti	pācittiyā
f.s.Nom.	adv.	f.s.Nom.	m.	caus.3s.opt.	adj.(f.s.Nom.)

五〇、若比丘尼，教畜生咒，犯懺悔。

50. Should any bhikkhunī teach lowly arts, it is to be confessed. [Cv.V.33.2]

~ Cittāgāravaggo pañcamo niṭṭhito. ~

## Ārāmavaggochaṭṭho 僧園品第六

<sup>1</sup> Pāci.IV,303 (CS:pg.399) : **Āvasathacīvaraṁ** nāma “Utuniyo bhikkhuniyo paribhuñjantū”ti dinnarā hoti.(月華衣(月經布)：提供比丘尼月經使用的(布)。)《善見律毘婆沙》卷第六：「月華者，月生水華，此是血名。」(T24.713.1)

<sup>2</sup> Pāci.IV,305 (CS:pg.401) : **Tiracchānavijjā** nāma yaṁ kiñci bāhirakām anathasāñhitām.(畜生學(咒))：任何外道無利益的(學問)。)

<sup>3</sup> 《四分比丘尼戒本》(T22.1037.2)：「若比丘尼誦習世浴咒術者，波逸提。」

## \*51. Ārāmapavisanasikkhāpadam(未經同意而)進入比丘僧園

51. Yā pana bhikkhunī jānam sabhikkhukam ārāmarām anāpucchā paviseyya, pācittiyam.

任何	比丘尼	明知	有	比丘	僧園	不問	進入	犯懺悔
ya	pana	bhikkhunī	jāna	sa+bhikkhuka	ārāma	anāpucchā	pavisiati	paccittiya
f.s.Nom.	adv.	f.s.Nom.	m.s.Acc.	adj.(m.s.Acc.)	m.s.Acc.	adv.	3s.opt.	adj.(f.s.Nom.)

**五一、若比丘尼，明知有比丘之僧園，未經同意而進入者，犯懺悔。**

51. Should any bhikkhunī, without asking permission, knowingly enter a monastery containing a bhikkhu , it is to be confessed. [See Bhikkhus' Pācittiya 23]

## \*52.Bhikkhu-akkosanasikkhāpadam 尋罵比丘

52. Yā pana bhikkhunī bhikkhum akkoseyya vā paribhāseyya vā, pācittiyam.

任何	比丘尼	比丘	辱罵	或	責罵	或	犯懺悔
ya	pana	bhikkhunī	bhikkhu	akkosati	paribhāsatī	paccittiya	
f.s.Nom.	adv.	f.s.Nom.	m.s.Acc.	3s.opt.	3s.opt.	adj.(f.s.Nom.)	

**五二、若比丘尼，辱罵或責備比丘者，犯懺悔。**

52. Should any bhikkhunī revile or insult a bhikkhu, it is to be confessed.\*

## \*53.Gaṇaparibhāsanasikkhāpadam 責罵大眾

53. Yā pana bhikkhunī caṇḍīkatā gaṇam paribhāseyya, pācittiyam.

任何	比丘尼	瞋的	大眾	責罵	犯懺悔	
ya	pana	bhikkhunī	caṇḍīkata	gaṇa	paribhāsatī	paccittiya
f.s.Nom.	adv.	f.s.Nom.	adj.(f.s.Nom.)	m.s.Acc.	3s.opt.	m.s.Nom.

**五三、若含瞋的比丘尼，責罵大眾者，犯懺悔。**

53. Should any bhikkhunī, in a fit of temper, revile a group (the Bhikkhunī Community), it is to be confessed.

## \*54.Pavāritasikkhāpadam 已受邀請

54. Yā pana bhikkhunī nimantitā vā pavāritā vā khādanīyam vā bhojanīyam vā

任何	比丘尼	受請	或	已邀請	或	硬食	或	軟食	或
ya	pana	bhikkhunī	nimanteti	pavāreti	khādanīya	bhojanīya			
f.s.Nom.	adv.	f.s.Nom.	pp.(f.s.Nom.)	pp.(f.s.Nom.)	n.s.Acc.	n.s.Acc.			

khādeyya vā bhuñjeyya vā, pācittiyam.

咀嚼	或	食	或	犯懺悔
khādati		bhuñjeyya		pācittiya
3s.opt.		3s.opt.		adj.(f.s.Nom.)

**五四、若已受請的比丘尼，已吃飽，卻又嚼食或噉食者，犯懺悔。**

54. Should any bhikkhunī, having eaten and turned down an offer (of further food), chew or consume staple or non-staple food (elsewhere), it is to be confessed. [See Bhikkhus' Pācittiya 35]

## \*55.Kulamaccharinīsikkhāpadam 慚俗家

55. Yā pana bhikkhunī kulamaccharinī assa, pācittiyam.

任何	比丘尼	俗家	慚	有	犯懺悔
ya pana	bhikkhunī	kula + maccharinī	atthi	paccittiya	
f.s.Nom. adv.	f.s.Nom.	n.	f.s.Acc.	3s.opt.	adj.(f.s.Nom.)

五五、若比丘尼，慚俗家<sup>1</sup>者，犯懺悔。

55. Should any bhikkhunī be stingy with regard to families (supporters), it is to be confessed.

## \*56.Abhikkhukāvāsasikkhāpadam 無比丘住處(入安居)

56. Yā pana bhikkhunī abhikkhuke āvāse vassam vaseyya, pācittiyam.

任何	比丘尼	無比丘	住處	住	入安居	犯懺悔
ya pana	bhikkhunī	a+bhikkhuka	āvāsa	vassa	vasati	paccittiya
f.s.Nom. adv.	f.s.Nom.	adj.(m.s.Loc.)	m.s.Loc.	m.s.Acc.	3s.opt.	adj.(f.s.Nom.)

五六、若比丘尼，在無比丘之住處入安居者，犯懺悔。

56. Should any bhikkhunī spend the Rains-residence in a dwelling where there are no bhikkhus (nearby), it is to be confessed.\*

## \*57.Apavāraṇāsikkhāpadam(於二部僧中)未行自恣

57. Yā pana bhikkhunī vassamvuṭṭhā ubhatosaṅghe tihi thānehi na pavāreyya ditṭhena vā

任何	比丘尼	雨	下雨	二部	僧	三	事	不	自恣	見	或
ya pana	bhikkhunī	vassa+<vassati	ubhato + saṅgha	ti	thāna	pavāreti	ditṭha<pp. of passati				
f.s.Nom. adv.	f.s.Nom.	m. pp.(f.s.Acc.)	m.s.Loc.	n.s.Loc.	ger.	pp.(f.s.Ins.)					

sutena vā parisankāya vā, pācittiyam.

聽	或	疑	或	犯懺悔
suta		parisankā		pācittiya
pp.(f.s.Ins.)		pp.(f.s.Ins.)		adj.(f.s.Nom.)

五七、若比丘尼，安居結束，未於二部僧中依見、聞、疑等三事行自恣者，犯懺悔。

57. Should any bhikkhunī, having completed the Rains-residence, not invite (criticism) from both Communities with regard to three matters — what they have seen, heard, or suspected (her of doing) — it is to be confessed.\*

## \*58.Ovādasikkhāpadam(不為)教誡或共住而往

58. Yā pana bhikkhunī ovādāya vā samvāsāya vā na gaccheyya, pācittiyam.

任何	比丘尼	教誡	或	共住	或	不	去	犯懺悔
ya pana	bhikkhunī	ovāda		saṁvāsa		na	gacchatī	pācittiya

<sup>1</sup> Pāci.IV,312(CS:pg.411) : **Kulāni** nāma cattāri kulāni-- khattiyakularūpa, brāhmaṇakularūpa, vessakularūpa, suddakularūpa.(俗家：四種俗家—刹帝利俗家、婆羅門眾俗家、吠舍俗家、首陀羅俗家。) **Maccharinī assāti** “Kathāni bhikkhuniyo nāgaccheyyū”ti bhikkhunīnaṁ santike kulassa avanṇāraṁ bhāsati, āpatti pācittiyassa. Kulassa vā santike bhikkhunīnaṁ avanṇāraṁ bhāsati, āpatti pācittiyassa.(慚俗家：“比丘尼如何不應去”，諸比丘尼靠近說不名譽(誹謗)的俗家，犯懺悔。或諸比丘尼靠近俗家說不名譽，犯懺悔。) 《四分比丘尼戒本》(T22.1038.1)：「若比丘尼於家生嫉妒心，波逸提。」

f.s.Nom. adv.	f.s.Nom.	m.s.Ins.	m.s.Ins.	3s.opt.	adj.(f.s.Nom.)
---------------	----------	----------	----------	---------	----------------

## 五八、若比丘尼，不為教誠<sup>1</sup>或共住而往者，犯懺悔。

58. Should any bhikkhunī not go for the exhortation or for the (meeting that defines) affiliation (i.e., the Uposatha), it is to be confessed.\*

## \*59. Ovādūpasaṅkamanasikkhāpadam(應於比丘僧)問布薩及求教誠

### 59. Anvaddhamāsam bhikkhuniyā bhikkhusaṅghato dve dhammā paccāsīsitabbā

半個月一次	比丘尼	比丘	僧團	二	法	期待、需求
anvaddhamāsa	bhikkhuni	bhikkhu	+saṅgha	dve	dhamma	paccāsīsatibbā
adv.	f.p.Nom.	m.	m.s.Abl.		m.p.Acc.	grd.

uposathapucchakañca ovādūpasaṅkamanañca. Tam atikkāmentiyā pācittiyam.  
 布薩 發問者 及 教誠 靠近 這 超過 犯懺悔  
 uposatha+pucchaka + ca ovāda+upasaṅkamana + ca ta atikkāmaya pācittiya  
 m. m.s.Acc. m. n.s.Acc. n.s.Acc. adj.(f.s.Abl.) adj.(n.s.Nom.)

## 五九、比丘尼於每半月應於比丘僧求二法，即問布薩及求教誠<sup>2</sup>，違此者，犯懺悔。

59. Every half-month a bhikkhunī should request two things from the Bhikkhu Community: the asking of the date of the Uposatha and the approaching for exhortation. In excess of that (half-month), it is to be confessed.\*

## \*60. Pasākhejātasikkhāpadam 肢節生癰瘡(單獨給男子作醫療)

### 60. Yā pana bhikkhunī pasākhe jātam gaṇḍam vā rudhitam vā anapaloketvā saṅgham vā

任何	比丘尼	肢節	生	癰	或	瘡	或	不	尊敬	僧伽	或
ya	pana	bhikkhunī	pasākha	jāta	gaṇḍa	rudhita		an+apaloketi	saṅgha		
f.s.Nom. adv.	f.s.Nom.	m.s.Loc.	pp.(m.s.Acc.)	m.s.Acc.		n.s.Acc.		ger.	m.s.Acc.		

ganarām vā purisena saddhimā ekenekā bhedāpeyya vā phālāpeyya vā dhovāpeyya vā  
 大眾 或 男人 一起 一 一 離開 或 破開 或 洗 或  
 gaṇa purisa ekena+ekā bhedāpeti phālāpeti dhovāpeti  
 m.s.Ins. m.s.Ins. adv. f.s.Ins. caus.3s.opt. caus.3s.opt. caus.3s.opt.

ālimpāpeyya vā bandhāpeyya vā mocāpeyya vā, pācittiyam.  
 塗 或 繩 或 解開 或 犯懺悔  
 ālimpāpeti bandhāpeti mocāpeti pācittiya  
 caus.3s.opt. caus.3s.opt. caus.3s.opt. adj.(f.s.Nom.)

## 六〇、若比丘尼，在肢節生癰瘡，不敬僧團或大眾，單獨與男子一對一，或分開、或破開、或洗、或塗、或繩、或解者，犯懺悔。

60. Should any bhikkhunī, without having informed a Community or a group (of bhikkhunīs), alone with a man have a boil or scar that has appeared on the lower part of her body (between the navel and the knees) burst or cut open or cleaned or smeared with a

<sup>1</sup> Pāci.IV,315(CS:pg.414) : Ovādo nāma aṭṭha garudhammā.(教誠：八敬法。)

<sup>2</sup> Pāci.IV,315(CS:pg.415) : Ovādo nāma aṭṭha garudhammā. “Upasathampi na pucchissāmi ovādampi na yācissāmī”ti dhurañ nikkhittamatte āpatti pācittiyassa. (教誠：八敬法。“我將不問布薩，我將不求教誠”，於擋置職責，犯懺悔。)

salve or bandaged or unbandaged, it is to be confessed.

~Ārāmavaggo chattho niṭṭhito.~

## Gabbhinivaggo sattamo 孕婦品第七

### \*61.Gabbhinīsikkhāpadam 令孕婦(受具戒)

61. Yā pana bhikkhunī gabbhinīm vuṭṭhāpeyya, pācittiyam.

任何	比丘尼	孕婦	使受具戒	犯懺悔	
ya	pana	bhikkhunī	gabbhinī	vuṭṭhāpeti	pācittiyam
f.s.Nom.	adv.	f.s.Nom.	f.s.Acc.	caus.3s.opt.	adj.(f.s.Nom.)

六一、若比丘尼，使孕婦受具戒者，犯懺悔。

61. Should any bhikkhunī sponsor (the Acceptance (*upasampada*) of) a pregnant woman, it is to be confessed.

### \*62.Pāyantīsikkhāpadam 令有幼兒之婦女(受具戒)

62. Yā pana bhikkhunī pāyantīm vuṭṭhāpeyya, pācittiyam.

任何	比丘尼	有幼兒之婦女	使受具戒	犯懺悔	
ya	pana	bhikkhunī	pāyantī	vuṭṭhāpeti	pācittiyam
f.s.Nom.	adv.	f.s.Nom.	f.s.Acc.	caus.3s.opt.	adj.(f.s.Nom.)

六二、若比丘尼，使有幼兒之婦女<sup>1</sup>受具戒者，犯懺悔。

62. Should any bhikkhunī sponsor (the Acceptance of) a woman who is still nursing, it is to be confessed.

### \*63.Paṭhamasikkhamānasikkhāpadam(令未二年學六法戒之)式叉摩那受具戒(1)

63. Yā pana bhikkhunī dve vassāni chasu dhammesu asikkhitasikkhamānam

任何	比丘尼	二	年	六	法	未	學習	學
ya	pana	bhikkhunī	dve	vassa	cha	dhamma	a + sikkhita	+ sikkhā
f.s.Nom.	adv.	f.s.Nom.	m.s.Acc.		n.p.Loc.	pp.	f.s.Acc.	

sikkhamānam vuṭṭhāpeyya, pācittiyam.

式叉摩那	使受具戒	犯懺悔
sikkhamāna	vuṭṭhāpeti	pācittiyam
f.s.Acc.	caus.3s.opt.	adj.(f.s.Nom.)

六三、若比丘尼，使未二年學六法戒之式叉摩那受具戒者，犯懺悔。

63. Should any bhikkhunī sponsor (the Acceptance of) a trainee who has not trained for two years in the six precepts, it is to be confessed.\*

### \*64.Dutiyasikkhamānasikkhāpadam(未得許可令二年學六法戒之)式叉摩那受具戒(1)

64. Yā pana bhikkhunī dve vassāni chasu dhammesu sikkhitasikkhamānam sikkhamānam

任何	比丘尼	二	年	六	法	學習	學	式叉摩那
ya	pana	bhikkhunī	dve	vassa	cha	dhamma	sikkhita + sikkhā	sikkhamāna
f.s.Nom.	adv.	f.s.Nom.	m.s.Acc.		n.p.Loc.	pp.	f.s.Acc.	f.s.Acc.

<sup>1</sup> Pāci.IV,318(CS:pg.418) : Pāyantī nāma mātā vā hoti dhāti vā. (有幼兒之婦女：(有幼兒之)母親，或養母。)

saṅghena asammataṁ vuṭṭhāpeyya, pācittiyam.

僧團	未	批准	使受具戒	犯懺悔
saṅgha	a +	sammata	vuṭṭhāpeti	pācittiya
m.s.Ins.	pp.(m.s.Acc.)		3s.opt.	adj.(f.s.Nom.)

**六四、若比丘尼，未得僧團之許可而使於二年學六法戒的式叉摩那受具戒者，犯懺悔。**

64. Should any bhikkhunī sponsor (the Acceptance of) a trainee who has not trained for two years in the six precepts and who has not been authorized by a Community, it is to be confessed.

#### \*65.Paṭhamagihigatasikkhāpadam 有性行為的女人受具戒者(1)

65. Yā pana bhikkhunī ūnadvādasavassam gihigatam vuṭṭhāpeyya, pācittiyam.

任何	比丘尼	不足	二十	歲	有性行為(的女人)	使受具戒	犯懺悔
ya	pana	bhikkhunī	ūna+dvādasa+vassa		gihigatā	vuṭṭhāpeti	pācittiya
f.s.Nom.	adv.	f.s.Nom.			f.s.Acc.	3s.opt.	adj.(f.s.Nom.)

**六五、若比丘尼，使未滿二十歲之有性行為的女人<sup>1</sup>受具戒者，犯懺悔。**

65. Should any bhikkhunī sponsor (the Acceptance of) a married woman who (has been married) less than twelve years, it is to be confessed. [See Bhikkhus' Pācittiya 65]

#### \*66.Dutiyagihigatasikkhāpadam 有性行為的女人受具戒者(2)

66. Yā pana bhikkhunī paripuṇḍadvādasavassam gihigatam dve vassāni chasu dhammesu

任何	比丘尼	滿	二十	歲	有性行為的女人	二	年	六	法
ya	pana	bhikkhunī	paripuṇṇa+dvādasa+vassa		gihigatā	dve	vassa	cha	dhamma
f.s.Nom.	adv.	f.s.Nom.	pp.		m.s.Acc.	f.s.Acc.	m.s.Acc.		n.p.Loc.

asikkhitasikkham vuṭṭhāpeyya, pācittiyam.

未	學習	學	使受具戒	犯懺悔
a +	sikkhita	+ sikkhā	vuṭṭhāpeti	pācittiya
pp.			3s.opt.	adj.(f.s.Nom.)

**六六、若比丘尼，使滿二十歲之有性行為的女人，未於二年學六法戒而受具戒者，犯懺悔。**

<sup>1</sup> Pāci.IV,322(CS:pg.422) : Gihigatā nāma purisantaragatā vuccati.(有性行為的女人：男人到內室的女人。) PED page 469 : ‘**antaragatā**’ touched by a man (lit. gone in by . . .), a woman who has sexual intercourse, a woman in intercourse with a man.(到內室的女人：被男人撫摸，有性行為的女人，跟男人有性行為的女人。)

66. Should any bhikkhunī sponsor (the Acceptance of) a married woman who (has been married) fully twelve years but who has not trained for two years in the six precepts, it is to be confessed. \*

### \*67.Tatiyagihigatasikkhāpadam 有性行為的女人受具戒者(3)

67. Yā pana bhikkhunī paripuṇḍadvādasavassamī gihigatām dve vassāni chasu dhammesu  
 任何 比丘尼 滿 二十 歲 有性行為的女人 二 年 六 法  
 ya pana bhikkhunī paripuṇḍa+dvādasa+vassa gihigatā dve vassa cha dhamma  
 f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom. pp. m.s.Acc. f.s.Acc. m.s.Acc. n.p.Loc.

sikkhitasikkham saṅghena asammataṁ vuṭṭhāpeyya, pācittiyam.

學習 學 僧團 未 批准 使受具戒 犯懺悔  
 sikkhita + sikkhā saṅgha a + sammata vuṭṭhāpeti paccittiya  
 pp. f.s.Acc. m.s.Ins. pp.(m.s.Acc.) 3s.opt. adj.(f.s.Nom.)

**六七、若比丘尼，未得僧團之許可而使滿二十歲之有性行為的女人，已於二年學六法戒者，犯懺悔。**

67. Should any bhikkhunī sponsor (the Acceptance of) a married woman who (has been married) fully twelve years and who has trained for two years in the six precepts but who has not been authorized by a Community, it is to be confessed.

### \*68.Paṭhamasahajīvinīsikkhāpadam 不教護弟子(1)

68. Yā pana bhikkhunī sahajīvinīm vuṭṭhāpetvā dve vassāni neva anugganheyya  
 任何 比丘尼 同住者(=弟子) 使受具戒 二 年 不 督導、隨握持  
 ya pana bhikkhunī sahajīvinī vuṭṭhāpeti dve vassa na+eva anuggaṇhāti  
 f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom. f.s.Acc. 3s.opt. m.s.Acc. 3s.opt.

na anuggaṇhāpeyya, pācittiyam.  
 不 令督導 犯懺悔  
 anuggaṇhāpeti pācittiya  
 3s.opt. adj.(f.s.Nom.)

**六八、若比丘尼，使弟子<sup>1</sup>受具戒後，兩年不督導又不指派督導者，犯懺悔。**

68. Should any bhikkhunī, having sponsored (the Acceptance of) her student, neither assist her (in her training) nor have her assisted for (the next) two years, it is to be confessed. [See Cv.VIII.12.2-11]

### \*69.Pavattinīnānubandhanasikkhāpadam 不隨(師)學

69. Yā pana bhikkhunī vuṭṭhāpitām pavattinīm dve vassāni nānubandheyya, pācittiyam.  
 任何 比丘尼 已使受具戒 執行 二 年 不 跟隨 犯懺悔  
 ya pana bhikkhunī vuṭṭhāpita pavattinī dve vassa na+anubandhati paccittiya  
 f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom. pp.( m.s.Acc.) f.s.Acc. m.s.Acc. 3s.opt. adj.(f.s.Nom.)

**六九、若比丘尼，受具戒後，兩年不隨(師)學者，犯懺悔。**

<sup>1</sup> Pāci.IV,291(CS:pg.383) : Sahajīvinī nāma saddhivihārinī vuccati.(同住者(弟子)：同居之女。)

69. Should any bhikkhunī not attend to her preceptor for two years, it is to be confessed. [See Cv.VIII.11.2-18]

### \*70.Dutiyasahajīvinīsikkhāpadam 不教護弟子(2)

70. Yā pana bhikkhunī sahajīvinim vutṭhāpetvā neva vūpakāseyya na vūpakāsāpeyya

任何	比丘尼	同住者(=弟子)	使受具戒	不	遠離	不	令遠離
ya	pana	bhikkhunī	sahajīvinī	vutṭhāpeti	na+eva	vūpakāseti	vūpakāsāpeti
f.s.Nom.	adv.	f.s.Nom.	f.s.Acc.	caus.ger.		3s.opt.	caus.3s.opt.

antamaso chappañcayojanānipi, pācittiyam.

乃至	五	六	由旬	犯懺悔
antamaso	cha+pañca+yojanāni + pi			pācittiya
adv.	f.s.Nom.	ind.		adj.(f.s.Nom.)

七十、若比丘尼，使弟子受具戒後，不應遠離或不應指派她遠離五六由旬者，(否則)犯懺悔。

70. Should any bhikkhunī, having sponsored (the Acceptance of) her student, neither take her away nor have her taken away for at least five or six leagues, it is to be confessed.

~Gabbhinivaggo sattamo niṭṭhito.~

### Kumāribhūtavaggoatṭhamo 童女品第八

#### 71.Paṭhamakumāribhūtasikkhāpadam 童女受具戒者(1) (=Bhikkhunī P 65)

71. Yā pana bhikkhunī ūnavīsativassam kumāribhūtarām vutṭhāpeyya, pācittiyam.

任何	比丘尼	不足	二十	歲	童女	使受具戒	犯懺悔
ya	pana	bhikkhunī	ūna+vīsati+vassa		kumārī+bhūtā	vutṭhāpeti	paccittiya
f.s.Nom.	adv.	f.s.Nom.	m.s.Acc.		f.	f.s.Acc.	caus.3s.opt.
							adj.(f.s.Nom.)

七一、若比丘尼，使未滿二十歲<sup>1</sup>之童女受具戒者，犯懺悔。

71. Should any bhikkhunī sponsor (the Acceptance of) a maiden (unmarried woman/female novice) less than twenty years old, it is to be confessed. [Bhikkhus' Pācittiya 65]

#### \*72.Dutiyakumāribhūtasikkhāpadam 童女受具戒者(2)

72. Yā pana bhikkhunī paripuṇṇavīsativassam kumāribhūtarām dve vassāni chasu dhammesu

任何	比丘尼	滿	二十	歲	童女	二	年	六	法
ya	pana	bhikkhunī	paripuṇṇa + vīsati + vassa		kumārī+bhūtā	dve	vassā	cha	dhamma
f.s.Nom.	adv.	f.s.Nom.	pp.		f.	f.s.Acc.	m.s.Acc.		n.p.Loc.

asikkhitasikkham vutṭhāpeyya, pācittiyam.

未	學習	學	使受具戒	犯懺悔
a+sikkhita + sikkhā			vutṭhāpeti	paccittiya

<sup>1</sup> 未滿二十歲的人：Vin.Mv.I,76(CS:pg.109)：「未滿二十歲的人不堪忍耐寒、熱、飢、渴、蛇(darīsa)、蚊(makasa)、風(vātā =kucchivātā-piṭṭhivātādivasa 受胃腸風、背部風等的支配)、熱(āta= sūriyātāpo 太陽熱)、爬蟲類(sarīsapa 蛇、蠍等)所咬，(不堪忍耐)差勁的話、不好聽的話，身體不持久受苦、猛、粗、利、不悅、不可意而奪命。」

pp. f.s.Acc. 3s.opt. adj.(f.s.Nom.)

**七二、若比丘尼，使滿二十歲之童女未於二年學六法戒而受具戒者，犯懺悔。**

72. Should any bhikkhunī sponsor (the Acceptance of) a maiden fully twenty years old but who has not trained for two years in the six precepts, it is to be confessed.

\*73.Tatiyakumāribhūtasikkhāpadam 童女受具戒者(3)

73. Yā pana bhikkhunī paripuṇṇavīsativassam kumāribhūtam dve vassāni chasu dhammesu

任何	比丘尼	滿	二十	歲	童女	二	年	六	法
ya	pana	bhikkhunī	paripuṇṇa+vīsatī+vassa	kumārī+bhūtā	dve	vassā	cha	dhamma	
f.s.Nom.	adv.	f.s.Nom.	pp.	m.s.Acc.	f.	f.s.Acc.	m.s.Acc.	n.p.Loc.	

sikkhitasikkham saṅghena asammataṁ vuṭṭhāpeyya, pācittiyam.

學習	學	僧團	未	批准	使受具戒	犯懺悔
sikkhita + sikkhā		saṅgha	a +	sammata	vuṭṭhāpeti	pācittiya
pp.	f.s.Acc.	m.s.Ins.	pp.(m.s.Acc.)	caus.3s.opt.	adj.(f.s.Nom.)	

**七三、若比丘尼，未得僧團之許可而使滿二十歲之童女於二年學六法戒者受具戒，犯懺悔。**

73. Should any bhikkhunī sponsor (the Acceptance of) a maiden fully twenty years old who has trained for two years in the six precepts but who has not been authorized by a Community, it is to be confessed.

\*74.Ūnadvādasavassasikkhāpadam 未滿十二夏(令人受具戒)

74. Yā pana bhikkhunī ūnadvādasavassā vuṭṭhāpeyya, pācittiyam.

任何	比丘尼	未滿	十二	歲	使受具戒	犯懺悔
ya	pana	bhikkhunī	ūna+dvādasa+vassā	vuṭṭhāpeti	pācittiya	
f.s.Nom.	adv.	f.s.Nom.	f.p.Acc.	3s.opt.	adj.(f.s.Nom.)	

**七四、若比丘尼，未滿十二夏而使人受具戒者，犯懺悔。**

74. Should any bhikkhunī sponsor (an Acceptance) when she has less than twelve years (seniority), it is to be confessed. [See Mv.I.25.6]

\*75.Paripuṇṇadvādasavassasikkhāpadam 滿十二夏(令人受具戒)

75. Yā pana bhikkhunī paripuṇṇadvādasavassā saṅghena asammata vuṭṭhāpeyya, pācittiyam.

任何	比丘尼	滿	十二	歲	僧團	未	批准	使受具戒	犯懺悔
ya	pana	bhikkhunī	paripuṇṇa+dvādasa+vassā	saṅgha	a +	sammata	vuṭṭhāpeti	pācittiya	
f.s.Nom.	adv.	f.s.Nom.	pp.	f.p.Acc.	m.s.Ins.	pp.(m.s.Acc.)	caus.3s.opt.	adj.(f.s.Nom.)	

**七五、若比丘尼，滿十二夏，未得僧團之許可而使人受具戒者，犯懺悔。**

75. Should any bhikkhunī, even if she has fully twelve years (seniority) sponsor (an Acceptance) when she has not been authorized by a Community (of bhikkhunīs), it is to be confessed.

## \*76.Khiyanadhammasikkhāpadam 事後抱怨

76. Yā pana bhikkhunī “alām tāva te, ayye, vuṭṭhāpitē”ti vuccamānā “sādhū”ti paṭissuṇitvā  
 任何 比丘尼 夠了 這 她們(=妳)大姐 所授具戒 勸告 妥善、是 允諾  
 ya pana bhikkhunī alām ta+eva ta vuṭṭhāpeti ti <vucati sādhū ti paṭissuṇāti  
 f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom. adv. p.Nom. f.s.Voc. caus.(s.Ins.) ppr.(f.s.Nom.) adv. ger.

sā pacchā khiyanadhammarā āpajjeyya, pācittiyam.  
 她 之後 責備 法 發生 犯懺悔  
 ta khiyana + dhamma āpajjati pācittiya  
 f.s.Nom. adv. n. m.s.Acc. 3s.opt. adj.(f.s.Nom.)

**七六、若比丘尼，被勸告：「大姐！妳所授具戒已充足。」而應諾：「是！」事後卻抱怨者，犯懺悔。**

76. Should any bhikkhunī — having been told, “Enough, lady, of your sponsoring (Acceptance) for the time being,” and having answered, “Very well” — later complain, it is to be confessed.

## \*77.Paṭhamasikkhamānanavuṭṭhāpanasikkhāpadam 不使式叉摩那受具戒(1)

77. Yā pana bhikkhunī sikkhamānam “sace me tvām, ayye, cīvaraṁ dassasi,  
 任何 比丘尼 式叉摩那 如果 我 妳 大姐 衣 紿  
 ya pana bhikkhunī sikkhamānā ahaṁ ayye cīvaraṁ dadāti  
 f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom. f.s.Acc. adv. s.Dat. 2s.Nom. f.s.Voc. m.s.Acc. 2s.fut.

evāhaṁ tam vuṭṭhāpessāmī”ti vatvā sā pacchā anantarāyikinī  
 我 她 使受具戒 說完 該尼 之後 無 障難  
 eva + ahaṁ ta vuṭṭhāpeti ti vatti ta an+antarāyikinī  
 1s.Nom. f.s.Acc. 1s.fut.caus. ger. f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom.

neva vuṭṭhāpeyya, na vuṭṭhāpanāya ussukkam kareyya, pācittiyam.  
 不 使受具戒 不 受具戒 努力 作 犯懺悔  
 na+eva vuṭṭhāpeti vuṭṭhāpana ussukka karoti pācittiya  
 caus.3s.opt. f.s.Ins. n.s.Acc. 3s.opt. adj.(f.s.Nom.)

**七七、若比丘尼，對式叉摩那說：「大姐！如果妳給我衣，我讓妳受具戒。」該尼往後無障難而不使她受具戒，又不指派幫她受具戒而盡力者，犯懺悔。**

77. Should any bhikkhunī — having said to a trainee, “If you give me a robe, I will sponsor you (for Acceptance),” — then, when there are no obstructions, neither sponsor her (Acceptance) nor make an effort to have her sponsored (for Acceptance), it is to be confessed.

## \*78.Dutiyasikkhamānanavuṭṭhāpanasikkhāpadam 不使式叉摩那受具戒(2)

78. Yā pana bhikkhunī sikkhamānam “sace marām tvām, ayye, dve vassāni anubandhissasi,  
 任何 比丘尼 式叉摩那 如果 我 妳 大姐 二 年 跟隨  
 ya pana bhikkhunī sikkhamānā ahaṁ vassa anu-bandhati  
 f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom. f.s.Acc. adv. s.Acc. f.s.Voc. m.s.Acc. 2s.fut.

evāhaṁ tam vuṭṭhāpessāmī”ti vatvā sā pacchā anantarāyikinī neva vuṭṭhāpeyya,  
 我 這(=妳) 使受具戒 說完 該尼 之後 無 障難 不 使受具戒

eva+ahaṁ ta vutṭhāpeti ti vatti f.s.Nom. adv. an+antarāyikinī na+eva vutṭhāpeti  
f.s.Acc. s.Acc. 1s.fut.caus. ger. 3s.opt. f.s.Nom. 3s.opt.

na vutṭhāpanāya ussukkam̄ kareyya, pācittiyam̄.

不 受具戒 努力 作 犯懺悔  
vutṭhāpana ussukka karoti pācittiya  
f.s.Ins. n.s.Acc. 3s.opt. adj.(f.s.Nom.)

**七八、若比丘尼，對式叉摩那言：「友！汝若二年隨我學者，我使汝受具戒。」  
其後彼尼無障難而不使她受具戒，又不指派幫她受具戒而盡力者，犯懺悔。**

78. Should any bhikkhunī — having said to a trainee, “If you attend to me for two years, I will sponsor you (for Acceptance),” — then, when there are no obstructions, neither sponsor her (Acceptance) nor make an effort to have her sponsored (for Acceptance), it is to be confessed.

\*79.Sokāvāsasikkhāpadam̄ 陷入幽怨(的式叉摩那使受具戒)

79. Yā pana bhikkhunī purisasam̄saṭṭham kumārakasam̄saṭṭham caṇḍim sokāvāsam̄  
任何 比丘尼 男子 親近 童子 親近 充滿感情 憋 住  
ya pana bhikkhunī purisa + sam̄saṭṭha kumāraka+ sam̄saṭṭha caṇḍi soka + avāsa  
f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom. m. pp. m. pp. f.s.Acc. adj. m.s.Acc.

sikkhamānar̄m vutṭhāpeyya, pācittiyam̄.

式叉摩那 使受具戒 犯懺悔  
sikkhamānā vutṭhāpeti pācittiya  
f.s.Acc. caus.(3s.opt.) adj.(f.s.Nom.)

**七九、若比丘尼，跟男子及年輕人交往而打情罵俏，陷入幽怨的式叉摩那受具戒者，犯懺悔。<sup>1</sup>**

79. Should any bhikkhunī sponsor (the Acceptance of) a trainee who is entangled with men, entangled with youths, temperamental, a cause of grief, it is to be confessed.

\*80.Ananuññātasikkhāpadam̄(令父母及丈夫)未聽許(之式叉摩那受具戒)

80. Yā pana bhikkhunī mātāpitūhi vā sāmikena vā  
任何 比丘尼 父母 及 丈夫 或  
ya pana bhikkhunī mātāpitār sāmika  
f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom. m.p.Ins. m.s.Ins.

<sup>1</sup> 《四分比丘尼戒本》(T22.1037.3)：「若比丘尼，知女人與童男、男子相敬愛愁憂瞋恚女人，度令出家授具足戒者，波逸提。」

ananuññātam sikkhamānam vutthāpeyya, pācittiyam.  
 未 聽許、許可 式叉摩那 受具戒者 犯懺悔  
 an + anuññātam sikkhamāna vutthāpeti pācittiya  
 pp.(f.s.Acc.) f.s.Acc. caus.(3s.opt.) adj.(f.s.Nom.)

**八十、若比丘尼，使父母及丈夫未聽許之式叉摩那受具戒者，犯懺悔。**

80. Should any bhikkhunī sponsor (the Acceptance of) a trainee without getting permission from her parents or her husband, it is to be confessed. [See Mv.I.54.6]

\*81.Pārivāsikasikkhāpadam 由別住者(承諾式叉摩那受具戒)

81. Yā pana bhikkhunī pārivāsikachandadānena sikkhamānam vutthāpeyya, pācittiyam.

任何	比丘尼	別住者	給承諾	式叉摩那	使受具戒	犯懺悔
ya pana bhikkhunī	pārivāsikā	+ chandadāna	sikkhamāna	vutthāpeti	caus.(3s.opt.)	pācittiya
f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom.	f.	s.Acc.	f.s.Acc.			adj.(f.s.Nom.)

**八一、若比丘尼，欲由別住者承諾使式叉摩那受具戒者，犯懺悔。**

81. Should any bhikkhunī sponsor (the Acceptance of) a trainee by means of stale giving of consent, it is to be confessed.

\*82.Anuvassasikkhāpadam 年年(使受具戒)

82. Yā pana bhikkhunī anuvassam vutthāpeyya, pācittiyam.

任何	比丘尼	年年	使受具戒	犯懺悔
ya pana bhikkhunī	anuvassam	vutthāpeti	pācittiya	
f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom.	adv.	caus.(3s.opt.)	adj.(f.s.Nom.)	

**八二、若比丘尼，年年使人受具戒者，犯懺悔。**

82. Should any bhikkhunī sponsor (Acceptances — act as a preceptor) in consecutive years, it is to be confessed.

\*83.Ekavassasikkhāpadam 一年(度兩人受具戒)

83. Yā pana bhikkhunī ekam vassam dve vutthāpeyya, pācittiyam.

任何	比丘尼	一	年	二	使人受具戒者	犯懺悔
ya pana bhikkhunī	eka	vassa	dve	vutthāpeti	pācittiya	
f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom.	m.s.Acc.			caus.(3s.opt.)	adj.(f.s.Nom.)	

**八三、若比丘尼，一年度兩人受具戒者，犯懺悔。**

83. Should any bhikkhunī sponsor (Acceptances — act as a preceptor for) two (trainees) in one year, it is to be confessed.

~Kumāribhūtavaggo atthamo niṭṭhito.~

**Chattupāhanavaggonavamo 持傘著履品第九**

### \*84.Chattupāhanasikkhāpadam 持傘著履

84. Yā pana bhikkhunī agilānā chattupāhanām dhāreyya, pācittiyam.

任何	比丘尼	無病	傘	履	拿著、穿著	犯懺悔	
ya	pana	bhikkhunī	a+gilāna	chatta+ upāhana	dhāreti	paccittiya	
f.s.Nom.	adv.	f.s.Nom.	adj.(f.s.Nom.)	n	n.s.Acc.	3s.opt.	adj.(f.s.Nom.)

**八四、若比丘尼，無病而持蓋著履者，犯懺悔。**

84. Should any bhikkhunī, not being ill, use a sunshade and leather footwear (outside a monastery), it is to be confessed. [Sunshade: Cv.V.23.3; Footwear: See Mv.I.30, Mv.V.4.3, Mv.V.5.2]

### \*85.Yānasikkhāpadam 乘車

85. Yā pana bhikkhunī agilānā yānenā yāyeyya, pācittiyam.

任何	比丘尼	無病	交通工具	乘(車)	犯懺悔	
ya	pana	bhikkhunī	a+gilāna	yāna	yāti	paccittiya
f.s.Nom.	adv.	f.s.Nom.	adj.(f.s.Nom.)	n.s.Ins.	3s.opt.	adj.(f.s.Nom.)

**八五、若比丘尼，無病乘車者，犯懺悔。**

85. Should any bhikkhunī, not being ill, ride in a vehicle, it is to be confessed. [Mv.V.10.2]

### \*86.Saṅghāṇisikkhāpadam 纏腰布

86. Yā pana bhikkhunī saṅghāṇīm dhāreyya, pācittiyam.

任何	比丘尼	腰布	纏、穿	犯懺悔	
ya	pana	bhikkhunī	saṅghāṇī	dhāreti	paccittiya
f.s.Nom.	adv.	f.s.Nom.	f.s.Acc.	3s.opt.	adj.(f.s.Nom.)

**八六、若比丘尼，纏腰布者，犯懺悔。**

86. Should any bhikkhunī wear a hip ornament, it is to be confessed. [Cv.V.2.1]

### \*87.Itthālañkārasikkhāpadam 穿戴婦女裝飾物

87. Yā pana bhikkhunī itthālañkāram dhāreyya, pācittiyam.

任何	比丘尼	婦女 裝飾物	穿戴	犯懺悔	
ya	pana	bhikkhunī	itthī+ ālañkāra	dhāreti	paccittiya
f.s.Nom.	adv.	f.s.Nom.	m.s.Acc.	3s.opt.	adj.(f.s.Nom.)

**八七、若比丘尼，穿戴婦女裝飾物者，犯懺悔。**

87. Should any bhikkhunī wear a woman's ornament, it is to be confessed. [See Cv.V.2.1]

### \*88.Gandhavañṇakasikkhāpadam 塗香、施粉

88. Yā pana bhikkhunī gandhavañṇakena nahāyeyya, pācittiyam.

任何	比丘尼	香 脂粉	塗、沐浴	犯懺悔		
ya	pana	bhikkhunī	gandha + vañṇaka	nahāyati	paccittiya	
f.s.Nom.	adv.	f.s.Nom.	m.	n.s.Acc.	3s.opt.	adj.(f.s.Nom.)

**八八、若比丘尼，若塗香、施脂粉<sup>1</sup>者，犯懺悔。**

88. Should any bhikkhunī (not being ill) bathe with perfumes and paint, it is to be confessed. [See Mv.VI.9.2 and Cv.V.2.5]

\*89. Vāsitakasikkhāpadam 塗香粉、油粉

89. Yā pana bhikkhunī vāsitakena piññākena nahāyeyya, pācittiyam.

任何	比丘尼	香粉	含油種子的麵粉	塗、沐浴	犯懺悔
ya pana	bhikkhunī	vāsitaka	piññāka	nahāyati	pācittiya
f.s.Nom.	adv. f.s.Nom.	n.s.Ins.	n.s.Ins.	3s.opt.	f.s.Nom.

**八九、若比丘尼，以香粉、油粉塗於身者，犯懺悔。<sup>2</sup>**

89. Should any bhikkhunī (not being ill) bathe with scented sesame powder, it is to be confessed. [See Mv.VI.9.2]

\*90. Bhikkhuni-ummaddāpanasikkhāpadam 使比丘尼揉(或按摩)

90. Yā pana bhikkhunī bhikkhuniyā ummaddāpeyya vā parimaddāpeyya vā, pācittiyam.

任何	比丘尼	比丘尼	使揉	或	使按摩	或	犯懺悔
ya pana	bhikkhunī	bhikkhunī	ummaddāpeti		parimaddāpeti		pācittiya
f.s.Nom.	adv. f.s.Nom.	f.s.Acc.	caus.3s.opt.		caus.3s.opt.		adj.(f.s.Nom.)

**九〇、若比丘尼，使比丘尼揉或按摩者，犯懺悔。**

90. Should any bhikkhunī (not being ill) have another bhikkhunī rub or massage her, it is to be confessed.

\*91. Sikkhamāna-ummaddāpanasikkhāpadam 使式叉摩那揉(或按摩)

91. Yā pana bhikkhunī sikkhamānāya ummaddāpeyya vā parimaddāpeyya vā, pācittiyam.

任何	比丘尼	式叉摩那	使揉	或	使按摩	或	犯懺悔
ya pana	bhikkhunī	sikkhamānā	ummaddāpeti		parimaddāpeti		pācittiya
f.s.Nom.	adv. f.s.Nom.	f.s.Acc.	caus.3s.opt.		caus.3s.opt.		adj.(f.s.Nom.)

**九一、若比丘尼，使式叉摩那揉或按摩者，犯懺悔。**

91. Should any bhikkhunī (not being ill) have a trainee rub or massage her, it is to be confessed.

\*92. Sāmaṇerī-ummaddāpanasikkhāpadam 使沙彌尼揉(或按摩)

92. Yā pana bhikkhunī sāmaṇeriyā ummaddāpeyya vā parimaddāpeyya vā, pācittiyam.

任何	比丘尼	沙彌尼	使揉	或	使按摩	或	犯懺悔
ya pana	bhikkhunī	sāmaṇerī	ummaddāpeti		parimaddāpeti		pācittiya
f.s.Nom.	adv. f.s.Nom.	f.s.Acc.	caus.3s.opt.		caus.3s.opt.		adj.(f.s.Nom.)

<sup>1</sup> Pāci.IV,341(CS:pg.456) : **Gandho** nāma yo koci gandho. **Vaṇṇakam** nāma yaṁ kiñci vaṇṇakarā. **Nahāyeyyāti** nahāyati. Payoge dukkaṭārā, nahānapariyosāne āpatti pācittiyassa. ((香：任何香。脂粉：任何脂粉。塗：塗抹。施用者，犯惡作(突吉羅)，塗抹全身者，犯懺悔(波逸提)。))

<sup>2</sup> 《四分比丘尼戒本》(T22.1038.1)：「若比丘尼以胡麻滓，塗摩身者，波逸提。」

ya pana bhikkhunī	sāmañerī	ummaddāpeti	parimaddāpeti	paccittiya
f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom.	f.s.Acc.	caus.(3s.opt.)	caus.(3s.opt.)	adj.(f.s.Nom.)

## 九二、若比丘尼，使沙彌尼揉或按摩者，犯懺悔。

92. Should any bhikkhunī (not being ill) have a female novice rub or massage her, it is to be confessed.

### \*93.Gihini-ummaddāpanasikkhāpadam 使白衣女揉(或按摩)

93. Yā pana bhikkhunī gihiniyā ummaddāpeyya vā parimaddāpeyya vā, pācittiyam.

任何	比丘尼	白衣女	使揉	或	使按摩	或	犯懺悔
ya pana bhikkhunī	gihinī	ummaddāpeti		parimaddāpeti		paccittiya	
f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom.	f.s.Acc.	caus.(3s.opt.)		caus.(3s.opt.)		adj.(f.s.Nom.)	

## 九三、若比丘尼，使在家女揉或按摩者，犯懺悔。

93. Should any bhikkhunī (not being ill) have a woman householder rub or massage her, it is to be confessed.

### \*94.Anāpucchāsikkhāpadam(於比丘前)不問而坐

94. Yā pana bhikkhunī bhikkhussa purato anāpucchā āsane nisīdeyya, pācittiyam.

任何	比丘尼	比丘的	面前	不問	坐位	坐	犯懺悔
ya pana bhikkhunī	bhikkhu	purato	anāpucchā	āsana	nisīdeyya	paccittiya	
f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom.	m.s.Gen.	adv.	adv.	n.s.Loc.	3s.opt.	adj.(f.s.Nom.)	

## 九四、若比丘尼，在比丘前，不問而坐於床座者，犯懺悔。

94. Should any bhikkhunī sit down in front of a bhikkhu without asking permission, it is to be confessed.\*

### \*95.Pañhāpucchanasikkhāpadam(未得許可而)問比丘

95. Yā pana bhikkhunī anokāsakatam bhikkhum pañham puccheyya, pācittiyam.

任何	比丘尼	未 許可	比丘	問、質詢	質問	犯懺悔
ya pana bhikkhunī	an + okāsakata		bhikkhu	pañha	pucchati	paccittiya
f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom.	m.s.Acc.		m.s.Acc.	s.Acc.	3s.opt.	adj.(f.s.Nom.)

## 九五、若比丘尼，未得許可而問比丘者，犯懺悔。

95. Should any bhikkhunī ask a question (about the Suttas, Vinaya, or Abhidhamma) of a bhikkhu who has not given leave, it is to be confessed.\*

### \*96.Asamkaccikasikkhāpadam 不著僧祇支(入村)

96. Yā pana bhikkhunī asamkaccikā gāmarū paviseyya, pācittiyam.

任何	比丘尼	不著僧祇支(衣)	村	進入	犯懺悔
ya pana bhikkhunī	a+sañkaccikā		gāma	pavisati	paccittiya
f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom.	m.s.Acc.		m.s.Acc.	3s.opt.	adj.(f.s.Nom.)

**九六、若比丘尼，不著僧祇支<sup>1</sup>而入村者，犯懺悔。**

96. Should any bhikkhunī enter a village without her vest, it is to be confessed.

~Chattupāhanavaggo navamo niṭṭhito.~

## Musāvādavaggodasamo 妄語品第十

<sup>2</sup>97.Musāvādasikkhāpadam 妄語(=Bhikkhu P 1)

97. Sampajānamusāvāde pācittiyam.

知道 故意 虛妄 說 犯懺悔  
sampajāna+musā+vāda pācittiya  
adj. m.s.Loc. adj.(f.s.Nom.)

**九七、故意說謊，犯懺悔。**

97. A deliberate lie is to be confessed.

98.Omasavādasikkhāpadam 辱罵(=Bhikkhu P 2)

98. Omasavāde pācittiyam.

侮辱 說 犯懺悔  
omasavāda pācittiya  
m.s.Loc. adj.(f.s.Nom.)

**九八、辱罵，犯懺悔。**

98. An insult is to be confessed.

99.Pesuññasikkhāpadam 謹謗(=Bhikkhu P 3)

99. Bhikkhunipesuññe pācittiyam.

比丘尼 謹謗 犯懺悔  
bhikkhunī + pesuñña pācittiya  
f. n.s.Loc. adj.(f.s.Nom.)

**九九、謹謗<sup>3</sup>比丘尼，犯懺悔。**

99. Malicious tale-bearing among bhikkhunīs is to be confessed.

100.Padasodhammasikkhāpadam 逐句地(一起誦讀法) (=Bhikkhu P 4)

100. Yā pana bhikkhunī anupasampannam padaso dhammam vāceyya, pācittiyam.

任何	比丘尼	未 受具足戒者	句	法	誦讀	犯懺悔
ya	pana	bhikkhu	an+upasampannā	pada	dhamma	vāceti
f.s.Nom.	adv.	f.s.Nom.	f.s.Acc.	m.s.Abl.	m.s.Acc.	caus.3s.opt.
						adj.(f.s.Nom.)

<sup>1</sup> Pāci.IV,345(CS:pg.462) : **Saṅkacikām** nāma adhakkakām ubbhanābhi, tassa paṭicchādanatthāya.(僧祇支：鎖骨以上、膝蓋以下之覆蓋衣。)Anāpatti acchinnačīvarikāya, naṭṭhacīvarikāya, gilānāya, assatiyā, ajānantiyā, āpadāsu, ummattikāya, ādikammikāyāti. (不犯：失衣、衣被燒、生病、無念、無知、發生事故時，癡狂者，最初之犯行者。)

<sup>2</sup> 97~166(同比丘波逸提法中之共通戒 70 條。)

<sup>3</sup> Pāci.IV,12. (CS:Pāci.pg.20) : 「謹謗」：有兩種情況：討好別人、有挑撥的意圖。」集錄十種謹謗情況：(由)名字、種姓、工作、手藝、疾病、特徵(或男性性器官)、染、犯罪、責備。

一〇〇、若比丘尼帶領未受具足戒的人逐句地(一起)誦讀法，犯懺悔。

100. Should any bhikkhunī have an unordained person recite Dhamma line by line (with her), it is to be confessed.

101.Paṭhamasahaseyyasikkhāpadam(與未受具足戒)同床睡覺(1) (=Bhikkhu P 5)

101.Yā pana bhikkhunī anupasampannāya uttaridvirattatirattarā sahaseyyam kappeyya, pācittiyam.

任何	比丘尼	未	受具足戒者	超過	二夜	三夜	同床	睡覺	合適、準備	犯懺悔
ya	pana	bhikkhunī	an+upasampannā	uttari+dvi+ratta+ti+ratta	saha+seyyā	kappeti	pācittiya			
f.s.Nom.adv.	f.s.Nom.		f.s.Ins.	adv.	n.	n.s.Acc.	f.s.Acc.	3s.opt.	adj.(f.s.Nom.)	

一〇一、若比丘尼與未受具足戒的人一起睡覺，超過兩、三夜的話，犯懺悔。

101. Should any bhikkhunī lie down together (in the same dwelling) with an unordained woman for more than two or three consecutive nights, it is to be confessed.

102.Dutiyasahaseyyasikkhāpadam(與男人)同床睡覺(2) (=Bhikkhu P 6)

102. Yā pana bhikkhunī purisena sahaseyyam kappeyya, pācittiyam.

任何	比丘尼	男人	同宿	睡覺	合適	犯懺悔
ya	pana	bhikkhunī	purisa	saha+seyyā	kappeti	pācittiya
f.s.Nom. adv.	f.s.Nom.	m.s.Ins.	f.s.Acc.	3s.opt.	adj.(f.s.Nom.)	

一〇二、若比丘尼與男人一起睡覺，犯懺悔。

102. Should any bhikkhunī lie down together (in the same dwelling) with a man, it is to be confessed.

103.Dhammadesanāsikkhāpadam 說法(超過五六句) (=Bhikkhu P 7)

103. Yā pana bhikkhunī purisassa uttarichappañcavācāhi dhammarām deseyya

任何	比丘尼	男人	超過	六五	話	法	開示
ya	pana	bhikkhunī	purisa	uttari+cha+pañca+vācā	dhamma	disati	
f.s.Nom. adv.	f.s.Nom.	m.s.Dat.	adv.	m.p.Ins.	m.s.Acc.	caus.3s.opt.	

aññatra viññunā itthiviggahena, pācittiyā.

除了	有知	女子	身體	犯懺悔
aññatra	viññū	itthī + viggaha	pācittiya	
adv.	adj.(m.s.Ins.)	f.	m.s.Ins.	adj.(f.s.Nom.)

一〇三、任何比丘對男人說法超過五六句，除了能理解的女子在場，犯懺悔。

103. Should any bhikkhunī teach more than five or six sentences of Dhamma to a man, unless a knowledgeable woman is present, it is to be confessed.

104.Bhūtārocanasikkhāpadam 愛真實(告訴未受具者證得上人法) (=Bhikkhu P 8)

104. Yā pana bhikkhunī anupasampannāya uttarimanussadhammā āroceyya,

任何	比丘尼	未	受具足戒者	超越	人	法	告訴
ya	pana	bhikkhunī	an+upasampanna	uttari+manussa+dhamma			āroceti

m.s.Nom. adv. m.s.Nom.	m.s.Dat.	adj.	m.
------------------------	----------	------	----

bhūtasmiṁ pācittiyam.

真實 犯懺悔

bhavati pācittiya

pp.(m.s.Loc.) adj.(f.s.Nom.)

一〇四、任何比丘告訴未受具足戒的人(證得)上人法，即使是真的，犯懺悔。

104. Should any bhikkhunī report (her own) superior human state to an unordained person, when it is factual, it is to be confessed.

105. Duṭṭhullārocanasikkhāpadam(告訴未受具比丘尼的)重罪(=Bhikkhu P 9)

106. Yā pana bhikkhunī bhikkhuniyā duṭṭhullam āpattim anupasampannassa āroceyya

任何 ya pana f.s.Nom.	比丘尼 bhikkhunī f.s.Nom.	比丘尼 bhikkhuni f.s.Gen.	下流的、粗惡的 duṭṭhulla m.s.Acc.	犯罪 āpatti f.s.Acc.	未受具足戒者 an+upasampanna m.s.Acc.	告訴 āroceti m.s.Dat.	3s.opt.
---------------------	------------------------	------------------------	----------------------------	--------------------	--------------------------------	---------------------	---------

aññatra bhikkhunisammutiyā, pācittiyam.

除了 aññatra adv. 比丘尼 bhikkhuni+sammuti f. 同意 pācittiya f.s.Abl. 犯懺悔 adj.(f.s.Nom.)

一〇五、若比丘尼向未受具足戒的人說(某)比丘尼的粗惡罪<sup>1</sup>，除了比丘尼(僧團)同意外，犯懺悔。

105. Should any bhikkhunī report (another) bhikkhunī's serious offense to an unordained person — unless authorized by the bhikkhunīs — it is to be confessed.

106. Pathavīkhaṇanasikkhāpadam 挖掘土地(=Bhikkhu P 10)

106. Yā pana bhikkhunī pathavim khaneyya vā khanāpeyya vā, pācittiyam.

任何 ya pana f.s.Nom.	比丘尼 bhikkhunī f.s.Nom.	土地 paṭhavī f.s.Acc.	挖掘 khaṇati 3s.opt.	或 vā conj.	叫人挖掘 khanāpeti caus.3s.opt.	或 vā conj.	犯懺悔 paccittiya adj.(f.s.Nom.)
---------------------	------------------------	---------------------	--------------------	------------	-----------------------------	------------	-------------------------------

一〇六、若比丘尼挖掘或叫人挖掘土地，犯懺悔。

106. Should any bhikkhunī dig soil or have it dug, it is to be confessed.

~Musāvādavaggo dasamo niṭṭhito.~

Bhūtagāmavaggoekādasamo 植物品第十一

107. Bhūtagāmasikkhāpadam(砍伐)植物(=Bhikkhu P 11)

107. Bhūtagāmapātabyatāya pācittiyam.

植物 bhūtagāma	砍伐 pātabyatā	犯懺悔 pācittiya
--------------	--------------	---------------

<sup>1</sup> 粗惡罪(duṭṭhullā)：犯八驅擯，及十七僧殘。(cf. Pāci.IV,128；CS:Pāci.pg.168)

m. f.s.Loc. adj.(f.s.Nom.)

## 一〇七、砍伐植物犯懺悔。<sup>1</sup>

107. The damaging of a living plant is to be confessed.

## 108.Aññavādakasikkhāpadam 轉移其它話題(顧左右而言他) (=Bhikkhu P 12)

108. Aññavādake vihesake, pācittiyam.  
 其他 言論 憂亂 犯懺悔  
 añña + vādaka vihesaka pācittiya  
 m.s.Loc. adj.(m.s.Loc.) adj.(f.s.Nom.)

## 一〇八、轉移其它話題，或(以沈默來)惱亂，犯懺悔<sup>2</sup>。

108. Evasive speech and causing frustration are to be confessed.

## 109.Ujjhāpanakasikkhāpadam(公開)指責(=Bhikkhu P 13)

109. Ujjhāpanake khiyyanake, pācittiyam.  
 指責 批評，瞋嫌 犯懺悔  
 ujjhāyati khyati pācittiya  
 m.s.Loc. m.s.Loc. adj.(f.s.Nom.)

## 一〇九、如果(公開)指責，或(私下)批評(僧職人員)<sup>3</sup>，犯懺悔。

109. Complaining about or criticizing (a Community official) is to be confessed.

## 110.Paṭhamasenāsanasikkhāpadam 臥具(不收就離開)(一) (=Bhikkhu P 14)

110. Yā pana bhikkhunī saṅghikam mañcam vā pīṭham vā bhisim vā  
 任何 比丘尼 僧團的 床 或 長板凳 或 床墊 或  
 ya pana bhikkhunī saṅghika mañca vā pīṭha vā bhisim vā  
 f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom. m.s.Acc. m.s.Acc. conj. n.s.Acc. conj. f.s.Acc. conj.

koccharām vā ajjhokāse santharitvā vā santharāpetvā vā,  
 坐墊、籐椅 或 露天 舉設 或 使人鋪設 或  
 koccha vā ajjhokāsa santharati vā santharāpeti vā  
 n.s.Acc. conj. m.s.Loc. ger. conj. caus.ger. conj.

<sup>1</sup> 《四分比丘尼戒本》(T22.1035.1)：「若比丘尼壞鬼神村者，波逸提。」Pāci.IV,33(CS:pg.50)：「不犯：『知這(草木)、給這(草木)、運來這(草木)、這(草木)有用途、作淨這(草木)。』無意圖、無知、無意圖致死者、癡狂者，最初之犯行者。」

<sup>2</sup> Pāci.IV,37(CS:Pāci.pg.55)：「回答其它話題：在僧伽事當中，犯罪的詢問，不欲討論，不盡力於此，而顧左右而言他(，說)：誰犯罪？犯什麼罪？在什麼地方犯罪？什麼是犯罪？妳對誰說？妳說什麼？」這是回答其它話題。」  
**Vihesako** nāma saṅghamajjhe vatthusmim vā āpattiyā vā anuyuñjyamāno tarī na kathetukāmo tarī na ugghātetukāmo tuñhībhūto saṅgharām viheseti.(惱亂：在僧伽事當中，犯罪的詢問，不欲討論，不盡力於此，沈默不答來惱亂。)

<sup>3</sup> Pāci.IV,38(CS:pg.57)：僧團所選已受具足戒的人，擔任分配房舍、指定請吃飯者、食物、雜貨等職務。有關僧團執事，詳細請見《小品》第六〈住所犍度〉，其中共列舉了十一種僧團執事：(1)分配食物。(2)分配房舍。(3)管理倉庫。(4)接受衣服。(5)分配衣服。(6)分配粥。(7)分配水果。(8)分配飯。(9)分配雜物。(10)分配布。(11)管理清潔工人。

一一〇、若比丘尼在空地上舖(曬)或叫人舖(曬)僧團的床、長板凳、床墊、坐墊，

110. Should any bhikkhunī set a bed, bench, mattress, or stool belonging to the Community out in the open — or have it set out —

tam pakkamanto n'eva uddhareyya na uddharāpeyya anāpuccham vā gaccheyya, pācittiyam.

它 離開 不 強調詞 收拾 不 使人收 未 請求 或 去 犯懺悔  
ta pakkamati na + eva uddharati na uddharāpeti an+āpucchā vā gacchati pācittiyā  
m.s.Acc. ppr.(m.s.Nom.) adv. 3s.opt. adv. caus.3s.opt. ger.(m.s.Acc.) conj. 3s.opt. adj.(f.s.Nom.)

她離開那(用具)時，既未(自己)收也沒有叫人收或未請(人代收)，便走了，犯懺悔。

and then on departing neither put it away nor have it put away, or should she go without taking leave, it is to be confessed.

111.Dutiyasenāsanasikkhāpadam 臥具(不收就離開)(二) (=Bhikkhu P 15)

111. Yā pana bhikkhunī saṅghike vihāre seyyam santharitvā vā santharāpetvā vā ,  
任何 比丘尼 僧團的 僧房 臥具 舉設 或 使人舉設 或  
ya pana bhikkhunī saṅghika vihāra seyya santharati santharāpeti  
f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom. m.s.Loc. m.s.Loc. m.s.Acc. ger. caus.ger.

一一一、若比丘尼在僧房中舖設或叫人舖設臥具，

tam pakkamanto n'eva uddhareyya, na uddharāpeyya, anāpuccham vā gaccheyya, pācittiyam.

那 離開 不 收拾 不 使人收 未 請求允許 或 去 犯懺悔  
ta pakkamati na + eva uddharati na uddharāpeti an+āpucchā gacchati pācittiyā  
m.s.Acc. ppr.(m.s.Nom.) adv. 3s.opt. adv. caus.3s.opt. ger.(m.s.Acc.) 3s.opt. adj.(f.s.Nom.)

她離開那(臥具)時，既未(自己)收也沒叫人收或未請(人代收)，便走了，犯懺悔。

111. Should any bhikkhunī set out bedding in a dwelling belonging to the Community — or have it set out — and then on departing neither put it away nor have it put away, or should she go without taking leave, it is to be confessed.

112.Anupakhajjasikkhāpadam 擠開(先到僧房的比丘尼) (=Bhikkhu P 16)

112. Yo pana bhikkhunī saṅghike vihāre jānam pubbūpagatam bhikkhuniṁ  
任何 比丘尼 僧團 房子 知道 先 到 比丘尼  
ya pana bhikkhunī saṅghika vihāra jānāti pubba+upagata bhikkhuni  
f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom. m.s.Loc. m.s.Loc. ppr.(m.s.Acc.) pp.(m.s.Acc.) f.s.Acc.

anupakhajja seyyam kappeyya, “yassā sambādho bhavissati, sā pakkamissatī,”ti.  
擠入、擠開 床、躺下 合適 彼 擰擠 變得 此 走開  
anupakkhandati seyyā kappeti ya sambādha bhavati ta pakkamissati+ iti  
ger. f.s.Acc. 3s.opt. f.s.Gen. m.s.Nom. 3s.fut. f.s.Nom. 3s.fut. ind.

一一二、若比丘尼明知而擠進開事先已到僧房裡的比丘尼，而躺下去，(說)：「覺得擁擠的人就會離開。」

Etad eva paccayam karitvā anaññam, pācittiyam.  
如此 正是 理由 作 擰進 不 其它 犯懺悔

eta      eva      paccaya      karoti      an+añña      pācittiya  
 m.s.Acc. adv.    m.s.Acc.    ger.        adj.(m.s.Acc.) adj.(f.s.Nom.)

就因這樣的理由而擠進去，不為其它(理由)，犯懺悔。

112. Should any bhikkhunī knowingly lie down in a dwelling belonging to the Community so as to intrude on a bhikkhunī who arrived there first, (thinking), “Whoever finds it confining will go away” — doing it for just that reason and no other — it is to be confessed.

### 113. Nikkadḍhanasikkhāpadam 趕人出房(=Bhikkhu P 17)

113. Yā pana bhikkhunī bhikkhuniṁ kūpita anattamanā saṅghikā vihārā nikkadḍheyya vā  
 任何      比丘尼      比丘尼      生氣      不 適意      僧團的      房子      拖出      或  
 ya      pana      bhikkhunī      bhikkhunī      kūpita      an+attamana      saṅghika      vihāra      nikkadḍhati  
 f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom.    f.s.Acc.    adj.(f.s.Nom.) adj.(f.s.Nom.)    m.s.Abl.    m.s.Abl.    3s.opt. conj.

nikkadḍhāpeyya vā, pācittiyam.

使人趕走      或      犯懺悔  
 nikkadḍhāpeti      vā      pācittiyam  
 caus.3s.opt.    conj.    adj.(f.s.Nom.)

——三、若比丘尼憤怒不悅，從僧房中把比丘尼拖出去或叫人拖出去，犯懺悔。

113. Should any bhikkhunī, angry and displeased, evict a bhikkhunī from a dwelling belonging to the Community — or have her evicted — it is to be confessed.

### 114. Vehāsakuṭisikkhāpadam 閣樓(使用可拆卸的床椅)(=Bhikkhu P 18)

114. Yā pana bhikkhunī saṅghike vihāre uparivehāsakuṭiyā āhaccapādakam mañcam vā  
 任何      比丘尼      僧團的      房子      上 空的      屋子      可被移動      腳      床      或  
 ya      pana      bhikkhunī      saṅghika      vihāra      upari+vehāsa+kuṭi      āhacca+pādaka      mañca  
 f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom.    m.s.Loc.    m.s.Loc.    adj.    m.    f.s.Loc.    adj. adj.(m.s.Acc.)    m.s.Acc.    conj.

pīṭham vā abhinisīdeyya vā abhinipajjeyya vā, pācittiyam.  
 長板凳      或      坐      或      躺      或      犯懺悔  
 pīṭha      abhi-nisīdati      abhi-nipajjati      pācittiyam  
 n.s.Acc.    conj.    3s.opt.    conj.    3s.opt.    conj.    adj.(f.s.Nom.)

——四、若比丘尼在僧房樓上，坐或躺在腳會脫落的床或長板凳上，犯懺悔。

114. Should any bhikkhunī sit or lie down on a bed or bench with detachable legs on an (unplanked) loft in a dwelling belonging to the Community, it is to be confessed.

### 115. Mahallakavihārasikkhāpadam(建造)大房子(=Bhikkhu P 19)

115. Mahallakam pana bhikkhuniyā vihāram kārayamānāya yāva dvārakosā aggalaṭṭhapanāya  
 大      又      比丘尼      房子      建造      限於      門      倉庫      門楣、門門      裝設  
 mahallaka      pana      bhikkhunī      vihara      kārayati      yāva      dvārakosa      aggala+ṭhapi  
 m.s.Acc.      adv.      f.s.Ins.      m.s.Acc.      ppr.(f.s.Ins.)      adv.      m.s.Abl.      f.      m.s.Dat.

ālokasandhiparikammāya dvitticchadanassa pariyāyam appaharite ṭhitena

窗戶	準備	二 三 層	圍繞	少 農作物	站
āloka+sandhi+parikamma	m.	dvi+ti+chadana n.s.Gen.	pariyāya m.s.Acc.	appa+harita m.s.Loc.	ṭhiti pp.(m.s.Ins.)

一一五、比丘尼叫人建造大房子時，限於門的附近，為了裝設門楣和預留窗戶，  
(工作人員)站在農作物稀少的地方可以塗蓋兩三層。<sup>1</sup>

115. When a bhikkhunī is building a large dwelling, she may apply two or three layers of facing to plaster the area around the window frame and reinforce the area around the door frame the width of the door opening,

Adhiṭṭhabbam. Ttato ce uttarim appaharite'pi ṭhito adhiṭṭhaheyya, pācittiyaṁ.  
 安排 這 如果 超過 少 農作物 也 站 安排 犯懺悔  
 adhiṭṭhāti ta ce uttarim appa+harite<harita+api ṭhiti adhiṭṭhāti pācittiya  
 grd.(m.s.Nom.) s.Abl. conj. adv. m.s.Loc. ind. pp.(m.s.Nom.) 3s.opt. adj.(f.s.Nom.)

即使(工作人員)站在農作物稀少的地方，如果塗蓋超過了那(限定)，犯懺悔。

while standing where there are no crops to speak of. Should she apply more than that, even if standing where there are no crops to speak of, it is to be confessed.

## 116. Sappāṇakasikkhāpadam 有生物的水(澆到草或地上) (=Bhikkhu P 20)

116. Yā pana bhikkhunī jānam sappāṇakan udakam tiṇam vā mattikam vā  
 任何 比丘尼 知道 有生命的 水 草 或 土 或  
 ya pana bhikkhunī jānatī sa-pānaka udaka tiṇa mattika  
 f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom. ppr.(m.s.Nom.) m.s.Acc. n.s.Acc. m.s.Acc. f.s.Acc.

siñceyya vā siñcāpeyya vā, pācittiyaṁ.  
 澆 灑 或 使人澆 灑 或 犯懺悔  
 siñcati siñcāpeti pācittiya  
 3s.opt. caus.3s.opt. adj.(f.s.Nom.)

一一六、若比丘尼明知而澆有生物的水到草或地上，或叫人澆，犯懺悔。

116. Should any bhikkhunī knowingly pour water containing living beings — or have it poured — on grass or on clay, it is to be confessed.

~Bhūtagāmavaggo ekādasamo niṭṭhito.~

## Bhojanavaggodvādasamo 食品第十二

### 117. Āvasathapiṇḍasikkhāpadam 在公共施食處(取食一次) (=Bhikkhu P 31)

117. Agilānāya bhikkhuniyā eko āvasathapiṇḍo bhuñjitarbo. Tato ce uttarim bhuñjeyya, pācittiyaṁ.  
 無 病 比丘尼 一 處所 食物 食用 這個 如果 超過 吃 犯懺悔  
 a+gilāna bhikkhunī eka āvasatha+piṇḍa bhuñjati ta bhuñjati pācittiya  
 adj.(f.s.Ins.) f.s.Ins. m.s.Nom. m. m.s.Nom. grd.(m.s.Nom.) s.Abl. conj. adv. 3s.opt. adj.(f.s.Nom.)

一一七、無病比丘尼可以在公共施食處<sup>2</sup>(取)食一次。如果吃超過那(次數)，犯懺悔。

<sup>1</sup> 《四分比丘尼戒本》(T22.1035.1)：「若比丘尼作大房，戶扉窗牖及餘莊飾具，指授覆苦齊二三節，若過者，波逸提。」

<sup>2</sup> Pāci.IV,71 (CS:Pāci.pg.97)：「**公共施食處**：五種正食的某一個食物。在廳堂、暫時的棚、樹下、露天、無限制的、就個人的需要及主意。無病比丘(只可)一次乞食。如果接受超過那(限量)‘我將吃的’，犯惡作。塞滿、再塞滿，犯懺悔。」

117. A bhikkhunī who is not ill may eat one meal at a public alms center. Should she eat more than that, it is to be confessed.

### 118. Gaṇabhojanasikkhāpadam 眾食(四人以上一起受邀吃飯) (=Bhikkhu P 32)

118. Gaṇabhojane	aññatra	saṁyā, pācittiyām.	Tatthāyām	saṁyā,	gilānasamayo,
眾 食物	除了	情況 情件	犯懺悔	這裡	這 情況

gana+bhōjana samaya pācittiya tattha+ayaṁ samaya gilāna+saṁyā  
m. m.s.Loc. adv. m.s.Abl. m.s.Nom. adv. m.s.Nom. m.s.Nom. n. m.s.Nom.

一一八、(四人以上的比丘尼)眾一起(受邀)吃飯，除了適當的條件，犯懺悔。

cīvara dāna samayo,	cīvara kāra samayo,	addhāna gaṁa na saṁyā,
布 紿予 時	衣服 製作 時	路程 行走 時

cīvara+dāna+saṁyā cīvara+kāra+saṁyā addhāna+gaṁa na+saṁyā  
n. n. m.s.Nom. n. m. m.s.Nom. n. n. m.s.Nom.

這裡的適當時候是這樣：生病時，佈施布時，作衣時，旅行時，

nāvābhīrūhana saṁyā, mahāsaṁyā, saṁaṇabhatta saṁyā. Ayām tattha saṁyā.		
船 乘 時 大(眾)(集會)時 沙門 食物 時 這 這裡 正確時候		

nāvā+abhi+rūhana+saṁyā mahā+saṁyā saṁaṇa+bhatta+saṁyā ayām tattha saṁyā  
f. n. m.s.Nom. m.s.Nom. m. n. m.s.Nom. m.s.Nom. adv. m.s.Nom.

乘船時，大眾集會時，(外道)沙門(供養)食物時。這是這裡的適當條件。

118. A group meal, except at the proper occasions, is to be confessed. Here the proper occasions are these: a time of illness, a time of giving cloth, a time of making robes, a time of going on a journey, a time of embarking on a boat, a great occasion, a time when the meal is supplied by contemplatives. These are the proper occasions here.

### 119. Kāṇamātusikkhāpadam 瞎女(未分享糕點或乾餅) (=Bhikkhu P 34)

119. Bhikkhuniṁ paneva kulaṁ upagataṁ pūvehi vā manthehi vā abhihaṭṭhum pavāreyya,		
比丘尼 又 良家 前往 糕點 或 乾餅 或 要去帶近來 邀請		

bhikkhunī pana+eva kula upagechati pūva mantha abhiharati pavāreti  
f.s.Acc. n.s.Acc. pp.(m.s.Acc.) m.p.Ins. m.p.Ins. ger. 3s.opt.

一一九、(在家人)邀請到了家裡的比丘尼恣意地拿糕點或乾餅，

ākaṅkhamānāya bhikkhuniyā dvattipattapūrā paṭiggahetabbā.		
需要 比丘尼 二 三 鉢 滿 接受		

ākaṅkhamāna bhikkhunī dvi+ti+patta+pūra paṭiggaheti  
ppr.(f.s.Ins.) f.s.Ins. m. m.p.Nom. grd.(m.p.Nom.)

需要的比丘尼可以接受兩三滿鉢。

Tato ce uttari paṭigganheyya, pācittiyām.	Dvattipattapūre	paṭiggahetvā
這 如果 超過 接受 犯懺悔 二 三 鉢 滿 接受	dvi+ti+patta+pūra	paṭiggaheti

ta patigganheyya pācittiyā adj.(f.s.Nom.) dvi+ti+patta+pūra patigganheyya  
m.s.Abl. 3s.opt. adj.(f.s.Nom.) m. adj.(m.p.Acc.) ger.

如果接受超過那(限量)，犯懺悔。接受兩三滿鉢，

tato nīharityā bhikkhunīhi saddhim̄ samvibhajitabbam̄, ayam̄ tattha sāmīci.

那(良家)	帶離開	比丘尼	與	分享	這 在這裡 正確的
ta	nīharati	bhikkhunī		samvibhajati	ayam̄ tattha sāmīci
m.s.Abl.	ger.	f.p.Ins.	adv.	grd.(m.s.Nom.)	f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom.

從那裡帶回去後，她應該與諸比丘尼一起分享。這樣(地分享)在這裡是正確的。

119. In case a bhikkhunī arriving at a family residence is presented with cakes or cooked grain-meal, she may accept two or three bowlfuls if she so desires. If she should accept more than that, it is to be confessed. Having accepted the two-or-three bowlfuls and having taken them from there, she is to share them among the bhikkhunīs. This is the proper course here.

## 120. Vikālabhojanasikkhāpadam 非時食(=Bhikkhu P 37)

120. Yā pana bhikkhunī vikāle khādanīyam̄ vā bhojanīyam̄ vā khādeyya vā bhuñjeyya vā, pācittiyam̄.

任何	比丘尼	非 時候	硬食	或	軟食	或	咀嚼	或	食用	或	犯懺悔
ya	pana	bhikkhunī	vi+kāla	khādanīya	bhojanīya	khādati	bhuñjati	pācittiyā			
f.s.Nom.	adv.	f.s.Nom.	m.s.Loc.	n.s.Acc.	n.s.Acc.	3s.opt.	3s.opt.	adj.(f.s.Nom.)			

一、如果任何比丘尼非時(在午後至隔天太陽出來前)咀嚼或食用硬食或軟食，犯懺悔。

120. Should any bhikkhunī chew or consume staple or non-staple food at the wrong time, it is to be confessed.

## 121. Sannidhikārakasikkhāpadam 儲存(超過正午的食物) (=Bhikkhu P 38)

121. Yā pana bhikkhunī sannidhikārakam̄ khādanīyam̄ vā bhojanīyam̄ vā khādeyya vā

任何	比丘尼	儲存	硬食	或	軟食	或	咀嚼	或
ya	pana	bhikkhunī	sannidhi+kāraka	khādanīya	bhojanīya	khādati	bhuñjati	pācittiyā
f.s.Nom.	adv.	f.s.Nom.	m.	m.s.Acc.	n.s.Acc.	n.s.Acc.	3s.opt.	adj.(f.s.Nom.)

bhuñjeyya vā, pācittiyam̄.

食用	或	犯懺悔
bhuñjati		pācittiyā
3s.opt.		adj.(f.s.Nom.)

二、若比丘尼咀嚼或食用儲存(超過正午)的硬食或軟食，犯懺悔。

121. Should any bhikkhunī chew or consume stored-up staple or non-staple food, it is to be confessed.

## 122. Dantaponasikkhāpadam 齒木(=Bhikkhu P 40)

122. Yā pana bhikkhunī adinnam̄ mukhadvāram̄ āhāram̄ āhareyya

任何	比丘尼	不 與	嘴	門口	食物	拿到
ya	pana	bhikkhunī	a+dinna	mukha+dvāra	āhāra	āharati
f.s.Nom.	adv.	f.s.Nom.	m.s.Acc.	n.	n.s.Acc.	m.s.Acc.

aññatra udakadantaponā, pācittiyam̄.

除了	水	齒木	犯懺悔
----	---	----	-----

udaka+dantapoṇa pācittiya  
adv. n. m.s.Abl. adj.(f.s.Nom.)

一二二、若比丘尼拿未給與(她)的食物到嘴吧，犯懺悔。除了水和(刷牙用的)齒木外。

122. Should any bhikkhunī take into her mouth an edible that has not been given — except for water and tooth-cleaning sticks — it is to be confessed.

123.Uyyojanasikkhāpadam(托鉢途中)趕走同伴(=Bhikkhu P 42)

123. Yā pana bhikkhunī bhikkhunim --”eh’āyye, gāmaṁ vā nigamaṁ vā  
任何 比丘尼 比丘尼 來 大姐 鄉村 或 城鎮 或  
ya pana bhikkhunī bhikkhunī eti ayye gāma nigama  
f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom. m.s.Acc. imp.(2s.pr.) f.s.Voc. m.s.Acc. m.s.Acc.

piṇḍāya pavisissāmā”ti, tassā dāpetvā vā adāpetvā vā uyyojettya  
食物 進入 她 使給予 或 不 使給予 或 趕走  
piṇḍa pavisati ta dāpeti a+dāpeti uyyojeti  
m.s.Abl. 1p.fut. f.s.Dat. caus.ger. caus.ger. 3s.opt.

一二三、若比丘尼如此對比丘尼說：「大姐！來呀，我們去村裡或鎮上托鉢。」

不管叫不叫人給她(食物)就趕走(她)，說□：

“gacchāyye, na me tayā saddhiṁ kathā vā nisajjā vā phāsu hoti,  
妳走 大姐 不 我 妳 一起 說話 或 坐 或 方便 有  
<gacchati ayye aham tvarī <katheti nisajjā phāsu < hū  
2s.imp. f.s.Voc. f.s.Gen. f.s.Ins. adv. f.s.Nom. f.s.Nom. m.s.Nom. 3s.pr.

「大姐！走吧，和妳一起說話或是坐在一起對我不方便，

ekikāya me kathā vā nisajjā vā phāsu hotī” ti. Etad’eva paccayam karitvā  
一 我 說話 或 坐 或 方便 有 如此 正是 原因 作 趕走  
eka aham <katheti nisajjā phāsu < hū etad paccaya karoti  
f.s.Gen. f.s.Gen. f.s.Nom. f.s.Nom. m.s.Nom. 3s.pr. m.s.Acc. ger.

anaññam, pācittiyam.  
非 其他 犯懺悔  
an + añña pācittiya  
adj.(m.s.Acc.) adj.(f.s.Nom.)

我一個人說話或坐著才方便。」就為了這樣的理由而趕(她走)，不是因為其它(理由)，犯懺悔。

123. Should any bhikkhunī say to a bhikkhunī, “Come, lady, let’s enter the village or town for alms,” and then — whether or not she has had (food) given to her — dismiss her, saying, “Go away, lady. I don’t like sitting or talking with you. I prefer sitting or talking alone” — doing it for just that reason and no other — it is to be confessed.

124.Sabhojanasikkhāpadam 有情欲的人家(=Bhikkhu P 43)

124. Yā pana bhikkhunī sabhojane kule anupakhaja nisajjam kappetiyam, pācittiyam.  
任何 比丘尼 有(情欲為)食物 良家 擅入 坐 合適 犯懺悔  
ya pana bhikkhunī sa+bhōjana kula anupakkhandati nisajjā kappeti pācittiya

f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom.      n.s.Loc.      n.s.Loc.      ger.      f.s.Acc.      3s.opt.      adj.(f.s.Nom.)

一二四、若比丘尼擅入(主人)懷有情欲的人家<sup>1</sup>中坐下來，犯懺悔。<sup>2</sup>

124. Should any bhikkhunī sit intruding on a family “with its meal,” it is to be confessed.

125.Rahopaticchannasikkhāpadam 單獨與男人坐在隱蔽處(=Bhikkhu P 44)

125. Yā pana bhikkhunī purisena saddhim raho pāticchanne āsane nisajjam kappeyya, pācittiyam.  
 任何      比丘尼      男人      一起      單獨      隱密      坐處      坐      合適      犯懺悔  
 ya      pana      bhikkhunī      purisa      rahas      paticchanna      āsana      nisajjā      kappeti      pācittiya  
 f.s.Nom.adv. m.s.Nom.      m.s.Ins.      adv.      adv.      n.s.Loc.      n.s.Loc.      f.s.Acc. 3s.opt.      adj.(f.s.Nom.)

一二五、若比丘尼和男人一起單獨地坐在隱密處，犯懺悔。

125. Should any bhikkhunī sit in private on a secluded seat with a man, it is to be confessed.

126.Rahonisajjasikkhāpadam 單獨與男人共坐(=Bhikkhu P 45)

126. Yā pana bhikkhunī purisena saddhim ekenekā raho nisajjam kappeyya, pācittiyam.  
 任何      比丘尼      男人      一起      一      單獨      坐      合適      犯懺悔  
 ya      pana      bhikkhunī      purisa      ekena+ ekā      raho      nisajjā      kappeti      pācittiya  
 f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom.      m.s.Ins.      adv.      f.s.Ins.      adv.      f.s.Acc. 3s.opt.      adj.(f.s.Nom.)

一二六、若比丘尼和男人一對一單獨地坐著，犯懺悔。

126. Should any bhikkhunī sit in private, alone with a man, it is to be confessed.

~Bhojanavaggo dvādasamo niṭṭhito.~

Cārittavaggoterasamo 拜訪品第十三

127.Cārttasikkhāpadam(用餐前後到其他人家)拜訪(=Bhikkhu P 46)

127. Yā pana bhikkhunī nimantitā sabhattā samānā santim bhikkhunim anāpucchā  
 任何      比丘尼      邀請      具有 食物      已經有      現存      比丘尼      不 告訴  
 ya      pana      bhikkhunī      nimantita      sa+bhutta      atthi      atthi      bhikkhunī      an+āpucchati  
 f.s.Nom.adv. f.s.Nom.      pp.(f.s.Nom.)      f.s.Nom.      f.s.Nom.      ppr.(f.s.Acc.)      f.s.Acc.      ger.

一二七、若比丘尼已經受(某人)邀請吃飯，沒有告訴共住的比丘尼，

purebhattām vā pacchābhattām vā kulesu cārittām āpajjeyya aññatra samayā,  
 之前 用餐 或 之後 用餐 或 良家 行為 拜訪 發生 除了 條件 情況  
 pure+bhutta      pacchā+bhutta      kula      cāritta      āpajjati      aññatra      samaya  
 adv. m.s.Acc.      adv      n.s.Acc.      n.p.Loc.      n.s.Acc.      3s.opt.      adv.      m.s.Abl.

就在用餐前或用餐後拜訪(其他)人家，除了適當的情況，

pācittiyam. Tatthāyam samayo, cīvaradānasamayo cīvarakārasamayo,  
 犯懺悔      這裡      這 條件 情況 衣服 紿予 時 衣服 作 時  
 pācittiya      tattha+ayam      samaya      cīvara+dāna+samaya      cīvara+kāra+samaya

<sup>1</sup> Pāci.IV,95(CS:Pāci.pg.127)：「有(情欲為)食物：俗家中女與男，雙雙形影不離，雙雙不離染。」

<sup>2</sup> 《四分比丘尼戒本》(T22.1035.2)：「若比丘尼，食家中有寶，強安坐者，波逸提。」「若比丘尼，食家中有寶，在屏處坐者，波逸提。」

adj.(f.s.Nom.) adv. m.s.Nom. m.s.Nom. n. n. m.s.Nom. n. m. m.s.Nom.

**犯懺悔。這裡的適當情況是這樣：佈施布時，作衣時。**

Ayām tattha samayo.

這 離這裡 時候 情況

ayām tattha samaya

m.s.Nom. adv. m.s.Nom.

**這是這裡的適當情況。**

127. Should any bhikkhunī, being invited for a meal and without taking leave of an available bhikkhunī, go calling on families before or after the meal, except at the proper times, it is to be confessed. Here the proper times are these: a time of giving cloth, a time of making robes. These are the proper times here.

128. Mahānāmasikkhāpadam 向摩訶男居士(索求供養) (=Bhikkhu P 47)

128. Agilānāya bhikkhuniyā cātumāsapaccayapavāraṇā sāditabbā aññatra punapavāraṇāya,

無病	比丘尼	四月	必需品	藥	邀請	供養	可接受	除了	再次	邀請
a+gilāna	bhikkhunī	cātu+māsa+paccaya	+	pavāraṇā	sādiyati		puna+pavāraṇā			
adj.(f.s.Ins.)	f.s.Ins.	m.	m.	m.s.Nom.	grd.(m.s.Nom.)		m.s.Abl.			

**一二八、無病比丘尼可以接受四個月的藥資具供養，除了再次邀請、**

aññatra niccapavāraṇāya. Tato ce uttarim sādiyeyya, pācittiyam.

除了	永久	邀請	這	如果	超過	接受	犯懺悔
nicca + pavāraṇā	ta				sādiyati	pācittiya	
adv.	adj.	f.s.Abl.	s.Abl.	adv.	3s.opt.	adj.(f.s.Nom.)	

**永久的邀請以外，如果接受超過那限制□，犯懺悔。**

128. A bhikkhunī who is not ill may accept (make use of) a four-month invitation to ask for requisites. If she should accept (make use of) it for beyond that — unless the invitation is renewed or is permanent — it is to be confessed.

129. Uyyuttasenāsikkhāpadam(往觀)出征的軍隊(=Bhikkhu P 48)

129. Yā pana bhikkhunī uyyuttam senam dassanāya gaccheyya,

任何	比丘尼	出發	軍隊	觀看	去
ya pana	bhikkhunī	uyyūñjati	senā	dassati	gacchati
f.s.Nom. adv.	f.s.Nom.	pp.(f.s.Acc.)	f.s.Acc.	m.s.Dat.	3s.opt.

aññatra tathārūpapaccayā, pācittiyam.

除了	適當	理由	犯懺悔
tathārūpa+paccaya		pācittiya	
adv.	adj.	m.s.Abl.	m.s.Nom.

**一二九、若比丘尼看出征的軍隊，除了適當的理由外，犯懺悔。**

129. Should any bhikkhunī go to see an army on active duty, unless there is a suitable reason, it is to be confessed.

## 130.Senāvāsasikkhāpadam 軍中住(=Bhikkhu P 49)

130. Siyā ca tassā bhikkhuniyā kocid'eva paccayo senām gamanāya, dvirattatirattam

有 而 這 比丘尼 任何 強調詞 理由 軍隊 前去 二 夜 三 夜  
 atthi ta bhikkhu paccaya senā gamana<gam dvi+ratta+ti+ratta  
 3s.opt. f.s.Gen. f.s.Gen. m.s.Nom. adv. m.s.Nom. f.s.Acc. n.s.Dat. n. n.s.Acc.

一三〇、(如果)這位比丘尼有任何理由要去軍中，

tāya bhikkhuniyā senāya vasitabbam. Tato ce uttari vaseyya, pācittiyam.  
 這 比丘尼 軍隊 可以住 這 如果 超過 住 犯懺悔  
 ta bhikkhunī senā <vasati ta vasati pācittiya  
 f.s.Ins. f.s.Ins. f.s.Ins. grd.(m.s.Acc.) s.Abl. 3s.opt. adj.(f.s.Nom.)

這位比丘尼可以和軍隊同宿二至三夜，如果住超過那(期限)，犯懺悔。

130. There being some reason or another for a bhikkhunī to go to an army, she may stay two or three (consecutive) nights with the army. If she should stay beyond that, it is to be confessed.

## 131.Uyyodhikasikkhāpadam(住軍中觀)演習(=Bhikkhu P 50)

131. Dirattatirattam ce bhikkhunī senāya vasamānā uyyodhikam vā balaggam vā

二 夜 三 夜 如果 比丘尼 軍隊 住 演習 或 集合 或  
 dvi+ratta+ti+ratta bhikkhunī senā vasati uyyodhika bala + agga  
 n. n.s.Acc. f.s.Nom. f.s.Ins. ppr.(f.s.Nom.) m.s.Acc. n. m.s.Acc.

一三一、如果比丘尼與軍隊同宿二至三夜時，如果她前往(觀看)演習、集合、

senābyūham vā anīkadassanam vā gaccheyya, pācittiyam.  
 佈署 或 校閱 或 去 犯懺悔  
 senā+byūha anīka+dassana <gacchati pācittiya  
 f. m.s.Acc. n. n.s.Acc. 3s.opt. adj.(f.s.Nom.)

佈署或閱兵，犯懺悔。

131. If a bhikkhunī staying two or three nights with an army should go to a battlefield, a roll call, the troops in battle formation, or to see a review of the (battle) units, it is to be confessed.

## 132.Surāpānasikkhāpadam 喝穀酒(等)(=Bhikkhu P 51)

132. Surāmerayapāne, pācittiyam.

穀物酒 水果酒 喝 犯懺悔  
 surā+meraya+pāna<pivati pācittiya  
 f. n. n.s.Loc. adj.(f.s.Nom.)

一三二、喝穀酒或水果酒<sup>1</sup>，犯懺悔。

132. The drinking of alcohol or fermented liquor is to be confessed.

<sup>1</sup> Pāci.IV,110(CS:pg.146)：「穀酒：包括五種穀酒：穀酒、餅酒、米酒、酵母酒、調和酒。迷羅耶酒：花酒、果酒、蜜酒、甘蔗酒，及上述諸酒的調和酒。喝：乃至喝吉祥草端的一滴酒，都算犯懺悔。」(cf. Vin.Pāci.IV,110))

## 133. Aṅgulipatodakasikkhāpadam 手指搔癢(=Bhikkhu P 52)

133. Aṅgulipatodake, pācittiyam.

手指	用手指輕挪(搔)	犯懺悔
aṅguli	+ patodaka	pācittiya
f.	m.s.Loc.	adj.(f.s.Nom.)

一三三、以手指搔癢(他人), 犯懺悔。

133. Tickling with the fingers is to be confessed.

## 134. Hasadhammasikkhāpadam(水中)嬉戲(=Bhikkhu P 53)

134. Udake hāsadhamme, pācittiyam.

水	笑	事情	犯懺悔
udaka	hāsa+dhamma		pācittiya
n.s.Loc.	m.	m.s.Loc.	m.s.Nom.

一三四、在水中嬉戲<sup>1</sup>, 犯懺悔。

134. The act of playing in the water is to be confessed.

## 135. Anādariyasikkhāpadam 不恭敬(=Bhikkhu P 54)

135. Anādariye, pācittiyam.

不	尊敬	犯懺悔
an+ādariya		pācittiya
n.s.Loc.		adj.(f.s.Nom.)

一三五、(受教誡時態度)不恭敬, 犯懺悔。

135. Disrespect is to be confessed.

## 136. Bhimsāpanasikkhāpadam 嘻驚(比丘尼) (=Bhikkhu P 55)

136. Yā pana bhikkhunī bhikkhunim bhimsāpeyya, pācittiyam.

任何	比丘尼	比丘尼	使恐怖	犯懺悔
ya	pana	bhikkhunī	bhikkhunī	bhimsāpeti
f.s.Nom.	adv.	f.s.Nom.	f.s.Acc.	3s.opt.
				adj.(f.s.Nom.)

一三六、若比丘尼嘻驚比丘尼, 犯懺悔。

136. Should any bhikkhunī try to frighten another bhikkhunī, it is to be confessed.

~Cārittavaggo terasamo niṭṭhito.~

## Jotivaggocuddasamo 點火品第十四

## 137. Jotisikkhāpadam 點火(取暖) (=Bhikkhu P 56)

137. Yā pana bhikkhunī agilānā visibbanāpekkhā jotim samādaheyya vā

任何	比丘尼	無	病	取暖	期望	火、點火	放一起	或
ya	pana	bhikkhunī	a+gilāna	visibbana+	apekkha	joti	<samādahati	
f.s.Nom.	adv.	f.s.Nom.	adj.(f.s.Nom.)	n.	adj.(f.s.Nom.)	m.s.Acc.	3s.opt.	

<sup>1</sup> Pāci.IV,112 (CS:Pāci.pg.149) : 「水中嬉戲：在水中超過腳踝，想笑，或跳入(水)或浮水或游泳，犯懺悔。」

samādahāpeyya vā aññatra tathārūpapaccayā, pācittiyam.

使燃燒 或 除了 適當 理由 犯懺悔  
<samādahāpeti tathārūpa+paccaya pācittiya  
3s.opt. adv. adj. m.s.Abl. adj.(f.s.Nom.)

一三七、若比丘尼無病，想要取暖而點火或叫人點火，除了適當的理由外，犯懺悔。

137. Should any bhikkhunī who is not ill, seeking to warm herself, kindle a fire or have one kindled — unless there is a suitable reason — it is to be confessed.

138. Nahānasikkhāpadam 洗澡(半個月超過一次) (=Bhikkhu P 57)

138. Yā pana bhikkhunī oren' aḍḍhamāsaṁ nhāyeyya, aññatra samayā, pācittiyam. Tatthāyam  
任何 比丘尼 內下 半 月 洗浴 除了 正確時候 犯懺悔 這裡 這  
ya pana bhikkhu orena aḍḍha+māsa nahāyati samaya pācittiya tattha+ ayaṁ  
f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom. m.s.Ins. adv. m.s.Acc. 3s.opt. adv. m.s.Abl. adj.(f.s.Nom.) m.s.Nom.

一三八、若比丘尼半個月內洗澡(超過一次)，除了適當的情況，犯懺悔。在這裡這

samayo, “diyadḍho māso seso gimhānan”ti “vassānassa paṭhamo māso” icc’ete  
正確時候 一個半 月 剩餘 夏季 雨季 第一個 月 這  
samaya diyadḍha māsa sesa gimhāna vassāna paṭhama māsa iti etad  
m.s.Nom. m.s.Nom. m.s.Nom. m.s.Nom. m.p.Gen. m.s.Gen. m.s.Nom. m.s.Nom. m.p.Nom.

是適當情況。認為□「夏季剩下一個半月」和「雨季的第一個月」，

aḍḍhateyyamāsā unhasamayo, parilāhasamayo, gilānasamayo, kammasamayo,  
半 第三 月 暑 時 热 時 病 時 工作 時  
aḍḍha+teyya+māsa unha+samaya parilāha+samaya gilāna+samaya kamma+samaya  
adj. m.p.Nom. adj. m.s.Nom. m. m.s.Nom. m. m.s.Nom. m. m.s.Nom.

這兩個半月是暑時，(還有)熱時，病時，工作時，

addhānagamanasamayo, vātavuṭṭhisamayo. Ayam tattha samayo.  
路程 行走 時 風 雨 時 這 這裡 正確時候  
addhāna+gamaṇa+samaya vāta+vuṭṭhi+samaya ayam tattha samaya  
n. n. m.s.Nom. m. f. m.s.Nom. m.s.Nom. adv. m.s.Nom.

旅行時，風雨時。這是這裡的適當情況。

138. Should any bhikkhunī bathe at intervals of less than half a month, except at the proper occasions, it is to be confessed. Here the proper occasions are these: the last month and a half of the hot season, the first month of the rains, these two and a half months being a time of heat, a time of fever; (also) a time of illness; a time of work; a time of going on a journey; a time of wind or rain. These are the proper times here.

139. Dubbaṇakaraṇasikkhāpadam(新衣染)難看的顏色(=Bhikkhu P 58)

139. Navam pana bhikkhuniyā cīvaralābhena tiṇṇam dubbaṇakaraṇānam aññataram  
新 比丘尼 衣服 得到 三 壞 顏色 狀態 其中之一  
navā bhikkhunī cīvara+labhati ti du + vanṇa + karaṇa aññatara  
adj.(s.Acc.) f.s.Ins. n. m.s.Ins. m.p.Gen. m. n.p.Gen. m.s.Nom.

dubbaññakaranam ādatabbarā nīlam vā kaddamam vā kālasāmam vā. Ānādā ce bhikkhu  
 壞顏色 狀態 取 青色 或 泥色 或 黑褐色 或 不取 如果 比丘  
 du+vanna+karaṇa ā+dadati nīla kaddama kālasāma an+ādiyāti bhikkhu  
 m. m.s.Nom. grd.(m.s.Nom.) m.s.Nom. m.s.Nom. m.s.Nom. ger. m.s.Nom.

tīṇam dubbannakaranānam aññatram dubbaññakaranam navam cīvaram paribhuñjeyya, pācittiyam.  
 三 壞顏色 狀態 其中之一 壞顏色 狀態 新 衣服 使用 懺悔  
 ti du+vanna+karaṇa aññatra du+vanna+karaṇa nava cīvara paribhuñjati pācittiya  
 m.p.Gen. m. m.p.Gen. adj.(m.s.Acc.) m. n.s.Acc. m.s.Acc. n.s.Acc. 3s.opt. m.s.Nom.

**一三九、若比丘尼得到新衣服<sup>1</sup>的時候，應該染上三種不好看的顏色的其中一種，或是青色或泥色或黑褐色<sup>2</sup>。如果比丘未染上三種不好看的顏色的其中一種就穿用新衣服，犯懺悔。**

139. When a bhikkhunī receives a new robe, any one of three means of discoloring it is to be applied: green, brown, or black. If a bhikkhunī should make use of a new robe without applying any of the three means of discoloring it, it is to be confessed.

#### 140. Vikappanasikkhāpadam 分享衣服(對方沒有捨出就使用)(=Bhikkhu P 59)

140. Yā pana bhikkhunī bhikkhussa vā bhikkhuniyā vā sikkhamānāya vā sāmanerassa vā  
 任何 比丘尼 比丘 或 比丘尼 或 式叉摩那 或 沙彌  
 ya pana bhikkhunī bhikkhu bhikkhunī sikkhamāna sāmanera  
 f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom. m.s.Dat. f.s.Dat. f.s.Dat. m.s.Dat.

**一四〇、若比丘尼與比丘、或比丘尼、或式叉摩那、或沙彌、沙彌尼，**

sāmaneriyā vā sāmam cīvaram vikappetvā apaccuddhārakam<sup>3</sup> paribhuñjeyya, pācittiyam.  
 沙彌尼 或 自己 衣服 分享 不 捨出 使用 懺悔  
 sāmanerī sāmam cīvara vikappeti a+paccuddhāraka paribhuñjati pācittiya  
 f.s.Dat. adv. n.s.Acc. ger. m.s.Acc. 3s.opt. m.s.Nom.

**分享衣服，(對方)沒有捨出，就使用，犯懺悔。**

140. Should any bhikkhunī, having herself placed robe-cloth under shared ownership (*vikappaṇa*) with a bhikkhu, a bhikkhunī, a female trainee, a male novice, or a female novice, then make use of the cloth without the shared ownership's being rescinded, it is to be confessed.

<sup>1</sup> Pāci.IV,120 (CS:Pāci.pg.159) : **Navam** nāma akatakappaṇi vuccati. **Cīvaram** nāma channam cīvarānam aññatarām cīvarām. (新：未作(點)淨。衣：六種衣之一。) 六種衣：saṅghāṭinī (僧伽梨)、uttarāsaṅgaṇī (鬱多羅僧)、antaravāsakam (下裙、安陀會)、nisīdanam (尼師壇) kaṇḍu-patīcchādim (覆瘡衣)、vassikasāṭikam (雨浴衣)。作點淨唸誦：Imam bindu-kappaṇi karomi。(一忙・敏度・卡邦・卡羅米)(我作點淨)

<sup>2</sup> 應該染上三種不好看的顏色的其中一種：雖然(染)像吉祥草端的衣也可取。**青**：兩種青：銅青、青葉青。**泥**：含水(之泥)。**黑褐**：任何褐色。(《四分比丘尼戒本》(T22.1035.3)作：「青、黑、木蘭」。)

<sup>3</sup> Pāci.IV,122 (CS:pg.161) : 「不捨出：即不給予，非享用親厚的，犯懺悔。」

## 141.Apanidhāpanasikkhāpadam 藏匿比丘尼衣鉢(等)(=Bhikkhu P 60)

141. Yā pana bhikkhunī bhikkhuniyā pattaṁ vā cīvaraṁ vā nisīdanāṁ vā sūcigharaṁ vā

任何 ya	比丘尼 pana	比丘尼 bhikkhunī	鉢 patta	或 cīvara	衣布 nisīdana	或 塊布 sūci+ghara	或 针盒 pācittiya
f.s.Nom.	adv.	f.s.Nom.	f.s.Gen.	m.s.Acc.	n.s.Acc.	n.s.Acc.	f.

kāyabandhanām vā apanidheyya vā apanidhāpeyya vā antamaso hasāpekkho'pi pācittiyaṁ.  
 身 帶子 或 藏匿 或 使人藏匿 或 縱使 玩笑 期望 也是 犯懺悔  
 kāyabandhana apanidahati apanidhāpeti hasa+apekkha pācittiya  
 m.s.Acc. 3s.opt. 3s.opt. adv. m.s.Nom. adj.(f.s.Nom.)

**一四一、若比丘尼藏或叫人藏(其他)比丘尼的鉢、或衣布、或坐具、或針盒、或腰帶，即使只為了開玩笑，犯懺悔。**

141. Should any bhikkhunī hide (another) bhikkhunī's bowl, robe, sitting cloth, needle box, or belt — or have it hidden — even as a joke, it is to be confessed.

## 142.Sañciccasikkhāpadam 故意(奪命) (=Bhikkhu P 61)

142. Yā pana bhikkhunī sañcicca pāṇam jīvitā voropeyya, pācittiyaṁ.

任何 ya	比丘尼 pana	故意地 bhikkhunī	生物 paṇa	生命 jīvita	剝奪 voropeti	犯懺悔 pācittiya
f.s.Nom.adv.	adv.	n.s.Nom.	n.s.Acc.	m.s.Abl.	3s.opt.	adj.(f.s.Nom.)

**一四二、若比丘尼故意奪取生物的性命，犯懺悔。**

142. Should any bhikkhunī intentionally deprive an animal of life, it is to be confessed.

## 143.Sappāṇakasikkhāpadam 有生物(的水) (=Bhikkhu P 62)

143. Yā pana bhikkhunī jānam sappāṇakām udakaṁ paribhuñjeyya, pācittiyaṁ.

任何 ya	比丘尼 pana	知道 bhikkhunū	有 jānāti	生命的 sa-pāṇaka	水 udaka	使用 paribhuñjati	犯懺悔 pācittiya
f.s.Nom.	adv.	f.s.Nom.	m.s.Acc.	m.s.Acc.	n.s.Acc.	3s.opt.	adj.(f.s.Nom.)

**一四三、若比丘尼使用明知有生物的水，犯懺悔。**

143. Should any bhikkhunī knowingly make use of water containing living beings, it is to be confessed.

## 144.Ukkotanasikkhāpadam 摾亂(明知已經依法處置的案件) (=Bhikkhu P 63)

144. Yā pana bhikkhunī jānam yathādhammām nihatādhikaraṇām punakammāya ukkoteyya,

任何 ya	比丘尼 bhikkhu	知道 jānāti	如 yathā+dhamma	規則 pp.	判定 nihata+adhikaraṇa	事件 n.s.Acc.	再 puna+kumma	羯磨 m.s.Dat.	擾亂 <ukkoteti
f.s.Nom.	adv.	f.s.Nom.	m.s.Acc.	m.s.Acc.	pp.	n.s.Acc.	m.s.Dat.	3s.opt.	

pācittiyan.  
 犯懺悔  
 pācittiya  
 adj.(f.s.Nom.)

**一四四、若比丘尼為了重新羯磨，擾亂明知已經依法處置的案件，犯懺悔。**

144. Should any bhikkhunī knowingly agitate for the reviving of an issue that has

been rightfully dealt with, it is to be confessed.

### 145. Theyyasatthasikkhāpadam 與賊隊相約(=Bhikkhu P 66)

145. Yā pana bhikkhunī jānam theyyasatthena saddhim samvidhāya ekaddhānamaggam  
 任何 比丘尼 知道 竊賊 商隊 一起 約定 一 路程 道路  
 ya pana bhikkhu jānāti theyya+sattha samvidahati eka+adhāna+magga  
 f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom. m.s.Acc. n. m.s.Ins. adv. ger. n. m.s.Acc.

paṭipajjeyya antamaso gāmantaram'pi, pācittiyam.

往走 乃至於 村落 之間 也 犯懺悔  
 paṭipajjati gāma+antara pācittiya  
 3s.opt. adv. m. m.s.Acc. adj.(f.s.Nom.)

一四五、若比丘尼明知而與賊隊相約，走上同一條道路，即使只(穿過)村落之間，犯懺悔。

145. Should any bhikkhunī knowingly and by arrangement travel together with a caravan of thieves, even for the interval between one village and the next, it is to be confessed.

### 146. Ariṭṭhasikkhāpadam 殘酷的(主張淫欲不會障礙修行) (=Bhikkhu P 68)

146. Yā pana bhikkhunī evam vadeyya, “tathāham Bhagavatā dhammarām desitām ājānāmi,  
 任何 比丘尼 如此 說 如此 我 世尊 法 開示 我理解  
 ya pana bhikkhunī vadati tathā+aham Bhagavant dhamma deseti ājānāti  
 f.s.Nom.adv. f.s.Nom. adv. 3s.opt. adv. s.Nom. m.s.Ins. m.s.Acc. pp.(m.s.Acc.) 1s.pr.

一四六、若比丘尼如此說：「我如此理解世尊所開示的法，

yathā ye'me antarāyikā dhammā vuttā Bhagavatā te paṭisevato nālam antarāyāya”ti.  
 如彼 彼 此 障礙的 法 說 世尊 此 從事 不事實上 妨礙  
 ya ime antarāyika dhamma vucati Bhagavant ta paṭisevati na+alarām antarāya  
 adv. m.p.Nom. m.p.Nom. m.p.Nom. m.p.Nom. pp.(m.p.Nom.) m.s.Ins. m.p.Acc. ppr.(m.s.Dat. ind. m.s.Dat.

對於從事任何這些世尊所說的障礙法<sup>1</sup>的人，事實上沒有障礙。」

Sā bhikkhunī bhikkhunīhi evam'assa vacaniyā, “māyye evam avaca, mā Bhagavatam  
 這 比丘尼 諸比丘尼 如此 有 勸告 不可 大姐 如此 說 不 世尊  
 sa bhikkhunī bhikkhunī atthi vatti mā vatti Bhagavant  
 f.s.Nom. f.s.Nom. f.p.Ins. adv. 3s.opt. grd.(f.s.Nom.) f.s.Voc. adv. 2s.aor. m.s.Acc.

該比丘尼應該被諸比丘尼如此勸告：「大姐！不要這樣說，不要誤解世尊

abbhācikkhi, na hi sādhu Bhagavato abbhakkhānam, na hi Bhagavā evam vadeyya.  
 毀謗 誤解 不因為 好 世尊 誤解 毀謗 不因為 世尊 如此 說  
 abbhācikkhati Bhagavant abbhakkhāti Bhagavant vadati  
 2s.aor. adv. adv. m.s.Gen. m.s.Nom. m.s.Nom. adv. 3s.opt.

因為誤解世尊是不好的，而且世尊並沒有這樣說。

<sup>1</sup> 障礙法：障道法，行淫欲。

Anekapariyāyenāyye antarāyikā dhammā vuttā Bhagavatā alañca pana te  
 不一方法 大姐 障礙 法 說 世尊 足夠 而且 這些  
 an+eka+paryāya antarāyika dhamma vucati Bhagavant alañ  
 m.s.Ins. f.s.Voc. m.p.Nom. pp.(m.p.Nom.) m.s.Ins. adv. adv. m.p.Acc.

朋友！世尊用許多方法說明障礙法，而且從事這些事情足以造成障礙。」

paṭisevato antarāyāyā”ti. Evañca sā bhikkhunī bhikkhunīhi vuccamānā tath’eva  
 從事 障礙 如此 而 這 比丘尼 比丘尼 勸告 如此 仍  
 paṭisevati antarāya ta bhikkhunī bhikkhunīhi <vucati tathā  
 ppr.(m.s.Dat.) m.s.Dat. adv. f.s.Nom. f.s.Nom. f.p.Ins. ppr.(f.s.Nom.) adv.

而該比丘尼被諸比丘尼這樣勸告時，仍然那樣堅持，

pagganheyya, sā bhikkhunī bhikkhunīhi yāvatatiyam samanubhāsitabbā  
 努力 這 比丘尼 比丘尼 直到 第三 勸告  
 paggañhati ta bhikkhunī bhikkhunīhi yāva+tatiyam samanubhāsatī  
 3s.opt. f.s.Nom. f.s.Nom. f.p.Ins. adv. grd.(f.s.Nom.)

諸比丘尼應該乃至三次勸告該比丘尼去放棄那(主張)。

tassa paṭinissaggāya. Yāvatatiyañce samanubhāsiyamānā tam paṭinissajjeyya,  
 它 捨棄 直到 第三 如果 勸 它 捨棄  
 m.s.Gen. m.s.Dat. yāva+tatiyam samanubhāsatī ta paṭinissajjati  
 adv. ppr.(f.s.Nom.) m.s.Acc. 3s.opt.

如果到了第三次被勸告時，(她)放棄它，

icc’etam kusalam. No ce paṭinissajjeyya, pācittiyaṁ.  
 如此 這 善 不 如果 捨棄 犯懺悔  
 kusala paṭinissajjati pācittiya  
 n.s.Nom. n.s.Nom. 3s.opt. adj.(f.s.Nom.)

那就好。如果不捨棄，犯懺悔。

146. Should any bhikkhunī say the following: “As I understand the Dhamma taught by the Blessed One, those acts the Blessed One says are obstructive, when engaged in are not genuine obstructions,” the bhikkhunīs are to admonish her thus: “Do not say that, lady. Do not misrepresent the Blessed One, for it is not good to misrepresent the Blessed One. The Blessed One would not say anything like that. In many ways, lady, the Blessed One has described obstructive acts, and when engaged in they are genuine obstructions.”

And should that bhikkhunī, thus admonished by the bhikkhunīs, persist as before, the bhikkhunīs are to rebuke her up to three times so as to desist. If while being rebuked up to three times she desists, that is good. If she does not desist, it is to be confessed.

~Jotivaggo cuddasamo niṭṭhito.~

## Dīṭṭhivaggopannarasamo 邪見品第十五

### 147.Ukkhittasambhogasikkhāpadam. 中止共食(=Bhikkhu P 69)

147. Yā pana bhikkhunī jānarām tathāvādiniyā bhikkhuniyā akatānudhammāya tam dīṭṭhirā  
 任何 比丘尼 知道 如那樣 說 比丘尼 不做 依法 那 (惡)見解  
 ya pana bhikkhunī jānāti tathā+vadīn bhikkhunī a+kata+anudhamma ta dīṭṭhi  
 f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom. m.s.Nom. adv. adj.(f.s.Ins.) f.s.Ins. pp. m.s.Ins. m.s.Acc. m.s.Acc.

一四七、若比丘尼明知(犯戒)比丘尼那樣子主張(淫行非障道法)、未(被僧團)依法  
 解除(不分享生活的處分)、尚未放棄那邪見，

appaṭinissatthāya saddhim sambhuñjeyya vā samvaseyya vā saha vā seyyam kappeyya,  
 不 捨棄 和 共食 或 共住 或 同 或 床、睡覺 合適  
 a+paṭinissajjati sambhujati samvasati seyya kappeti  
 adj.(f.s.Ins.) adv. 3s.opt. 3s.opt. m.s.Acc. 3s.opt.

pācittiyan.

犯懺悔  
 pācittiya  
 adj.(f.s.Nom.)

她與犯者共食<sup>1</sup>、共住<sup>2</sup>、或共宿的話，犯懺悔。

147. Should any bhikkhunī knowingly commune, affiliate, or lie down in the same dwelling with a bhikkhunī professing such a view who has not acted in compliance with the rule, who has not abandoned that view, it is to be confessed.

### 148.Kaṇṭakasikkhāpadam 障礙(法) (=Bhikkhu P 70)

148. Samanuddesāpi ce evam vadeyya, “tathāham Bhagavatā dhammarām desitam ājānāmi,  
 沙彌尼 也 如果 如此 說 如此 我 世尊 法 開示 我理解  
 samaṇuddesa vadati aham Bhagavant dharma deseti ājānāti  
 f.s.Nom. adv. 3s.opt. adv. m.s.Nom. m.s.Ins. m.s.Acc. pp.(m.s.Acc.) 1s.pr.

一四八、沙彌尼也這樣說：「我如此理解世尊所開示的法，

148. And if a female novice should say the following: “As I understand the Dhamma taught by the Blessed One,

yathā ye'me antarāyikā dhammā vuttā Bhagavatā te paṭisevato nālam antarāyāya” ti.  
 如彼 任何 這些 障礙的 事情 說 世尊 這些 從事 不事實上 妨礙  
 ya ime antarāyika dhamma vucati Bhagavant ta patisevati na+alaṁ antarāya  
 adv. m.p.Nom. m.p.Nom. m.p.Nom. pp.(m.p.Nom.) m.s.Ins. m.p.Acc. m.p.Acc. ppr.(m.s.Nom.) m.s.Dat.

對於從事這些世尊所說的障礙法的人，事實上沒有障礙。」

those acts the Blessed One says are obstructive, when engaged in are not genuine obstructions,”

<sup>1</sup> Pāci.IV,137(CS:Pāci.pg.180)：「一起吃：有兩種意思——吃食物和聽法。」

<sup>2</sup> samvaseyya：共住。這裡的「住」重點是在於「住在僧團，遵守僧團的規定」。其反義字「asaṁvāsa」即「四驅擯」的戒條中「若有比丘....是驅擯，不共住」，最後那句「不共住」，含有「自僧團驅出」的意思。

Sā samanuddesā bhikkhunīhi evam'assa vacanīyā, “māyye, samanuddese evam’ avaca,  
 這 沙彌尼 諸比丘尼 如此 有 勸告 不可 大姐 沙彌尼 如此 說  
 sa samanuddesā bhikkhunī atthi <vatti mā +ayye samanuddesā vatti  
 f.s.Nom. f.s.Nom. f.p.Ins. adv. 3s.opt. grd.(f.s.Nom.) f.s.Voc. f.s.Voc. adv. 2s.aor.

這位沙彌尼應該被諸比丘尼這樣勸誡：「大姐！沙彌尼！不要這樣說，

the bhikkhunīs are to admonish her thus: “Do not say that, lady novice.

mā Bhagavantam abbhācikkhi, na hi sādhu Bhagavato abbhakkhānam, na hi  
 不可 世尊 毀謗 誤解 不因為 好 世尊 誤解 毀謗 不因為  
 Bhagavant abbhācikkhati Bhagavant abbhakkhāti  
 m.s.Acc. 2s.imp. m.s.Gen. m.s.Nom.

不要誤解世尊，因為誤解世尊是不好的，而且世尊並沒有這樣說。

Do not misrepresent the Blessed One, for it is not good to misrepresent the Blessed One. The Blessed One would not say anything like that.

Bhagavā evam’ vadeyya. Anekapariyāyenāyye, samanuddese antarāyikā dhammā  
 世尊 如此 說 不一 方法 大姐 沙彌尼 障礙 事情  
 Bhagavant <vadati an+eka+pariyāya ayye samanuddesā antarāyika dhamma  
 m.s.Nom. adv. 3s.opt. adj.(f.s.Ins.) f.s.Voc. f.s.Voc. m.p.Nom. m.p.Nom.

大姐！沙彌尼！世尊用許多方法說明障礙的事情，

In many ways, lady, the Blessed One has described obstructive acts,

vuttā Bhagavatā alañca pana te paṭisevato antarāyāyā” ti.  
 說 世尊 足夠 而且 這些 從事 障礙  
 vucati Bhagavant ta paṭisevati antarāya  
 pp.(m.p.Nom.) m.s.Ins. m.p.Acc. ppr.(m.s.Nom.) m.s.Dat.

而且從事這些事情足以造成障礙。」

and when engaged in they are genuine obstructions.”

Evañca pana sā samanuddesā bhikkhunīhi vuccamānā tath’eva paggañheyya,  
 如此 而且 這位 沙彌尼 諸比丘尼 勸告 如此 努力  
 evarī ta samanuddesā bhikkhu <vucati tathā paggañhati  
 adv. adv. f.s.Nom. f.s.Nom. f.p.Ins. ppr.(f.s.Nom.) adv. 3s.opt.

而這位沙彌尼被諸比丘尼這樣勸戒時，仍然那樣堅持，

And should that female novice, thus admonished by the bhikkhunīs, persist as before,

sā samanuddesā bhikkhunīhi evam’assa vacanīyā,  
 這位 沙彌尼 比丘尼 如此 有 勸告  
 sa samanuddesā bhikkhunī atthi vatti  
 m.s.Nom. f.s.Nom. m.p.Ins. adv. 3s.opt. grd.(f.s.Nom.)

諸比丘尼應該如此訓誡這位沙彌尼：

the bhikkhunīs are to admonish her thus:

“Ajjatagge te, ayye, samanuddese na c’eva so Bhagavā Satthā apadisitabbo, yam’pi  
 今後 妳 大姐 沙彌尼 不 既 這 世尊 導師 尊稱 引述 彼也  
 ajjā+aggā tvarīm samanuddesā ta Bhagavant Satthar <apadisati  
 m.s.Loc. f.s.Ins. f.s.Voc. f.s.Voc. m.s.Nom. m.s.Nom. m.s.Nom. grd.(m.s.Nom.) m.s.Acc.

「大姐！沙彌尼！今後妳既不能尊稱世尊為導師，

‘From this day forth, lady novice, you are not to claim the Blessed One as your teacher,

c’aññā samanuddesā labhanti bhikkhunīhi saddhiṁ dvirattatirattarī sahaseyyam, sā’pi te  
 其他 沙彌尼 得到 比丘尼 與 二夜 三夜 同宿 此也 妳  
 ca aññā sanañuddesā labhati bhikkhunū dvi+ratta+ti+ratta saha+seyya sa+api tvarīm  
 m.p.Nom. f.p.Nom. 3p.pr. f.p.Ins. n. n.s.Acc. m.s.Acc. m.s.Nom. m.s.Gen.

而且，其他的沙彌尼得與諸比丘尼同宿兩三夜(的許可)，妳也沒有這種(權力)了。

nor are you even to have the opportunity the other female novices get — that of sharing dwellings two or three nights with the bhikkhunīs.

n’atthi, cara pire vinassā”ti. Yā pana bhikkhunī jānam tathā nāsitam samanuddesam  
 沒有 走開 喂 消失 任何 比丘尼 知道 如此 滅擯 沙彌尼  
 atthi carati pi+re <vinassati ya bhikkhunī <jānāti nāseti samanuddesā  
 3s.pr. 2s.imp. adv. ind. 2s.imp. f.s.Nom. f.s.Nom. m.s.Acc. adv. pp.(f.s.Acc.) f.s.Acc.

喂！妳走開，離開。」若有比丘尼明知如此被滅擯的沙彌尼，

Away with you! Get lost!” Should any bhikkhunī knowingly

upalāpeyya vā upaṭṭhāpeyya vā saṁbhuñjeyya vā saha vā seyyam kappeyya, pācittiyaṁ.  
 安慰 或 令照顧 或 共食 或 共 或 床、睡覺 合適 犯懺悔  
 upalāpeti upaṭṭhāpeti saṁbhuñjati seyya kappeti pācittiya  
 caus.3s.opt. caus.3s.opt. 3s.opt. m.s.Acc. 3s.opt. adj.(f.s.Nom.)

而安慰她或受她服務，或與她共食或共宿，犯懺悔。

support, receive services from, consort with, or lie down in the same dwelling with a female novice thus expelled, it is to be confessed.

#### 149.Sahadhammikasikkhāpadam 依法(規勸) (=Bhikkhu P 71)

149. Yā pana bhikkhunī bhikkhunīhi sahadhammikam vuccamānā evam vadeyya,  
 任何 比丘尼 比丘尼 共 法 勸告時 如此 說  
 bhikkhunī bhikkhunī saha+dhammika <vucati <vatti  
 f.s.Nom. f.s.Nom. f.p.Ins. m.s.Acc. ppr.(f.s.Nom.) adv. 3s.opt.

一四九、若比丘尼被諸比丘尼依法規勸時，她這樣說：

149. Should any bhikkhunī, admonished by the bhikkhunīs in accordance with a rule, say,

“Na tāvāham ayye etasmīm sikkhāpade sikkhissāmi yāva n’aññam bhikkhunīm byattam  
 不 直到這 我 大姐 這 學處 自我訓練 學習 直到那 不 其他 比丘尼 有學問的  
 tāvā+aham etad sikkhapada sikkhati na+añña bhikkhunū byatta  
 s.Nom. f.s.Voc. m.s.Loc. n.s.Loc. 1s.fut. adv. adj.(f.s.Acc.) f.s.Acc. adj.(f.s.Acc.)

vinayadharam paripucchāmī”ti, pācittiyam.  
 律持 請教 犯懺悔  
 vinaya+dhara paripucchatī ti pācittiya  
 m. adj.(f.s.Acc.) 1s.fut. adj.(f.s.Nom.)

「大姐！我尚未請教其他精通戒律的有學問比丘尼(之前)，我就不遵行這條學處。」犯懺悔。

“Ladies, I will not train myself under this training rule until I have put questions about it to another bhikkhunī, experienced and learned in the discipline,” it is to be confessed.

Sikkhamānāya bhikkhave bhikkhuniyā aññātabbam paripucchitabbam paripañhitabbam.

學習	諸比丘尼	比丘尼	瞭解	請教	詢問
sikkhati	bhikkhunī	bhikkhunī	<ā+jānāti	<paripucchatī	<paripañhati
ppr.(f.s.Ins.)	f.s.Voc.	f.s.Ins.	grd.(f.s.Nom.)	grd.(f.s.Nom.)	grd.(f.s.Nom.)

諸比丘尼！正在學習的比丘尼應該請教詢問(以求)理解。

Ayam tattha sāmīci.  
 這 這裡 正確  
 ayam f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom.

在這裡這是正確的(做法)。

Bhikkhus, [the Buddha is apparently addressing the bhikkhus who will inform the bhikkhunīs of this training rule] a bhikkhunī in training should understand, should ask, should ponder. This is the proper course here.

## 150. Vilekhanasikkhāpadam 迷惑小小學處(=Bhikkhu P 72)

150. Yā pana bhikkhunī pātimokkhe uddissamāne evam vadeyya, “kimpan’ imehi  
 任何 比丘尼 波提木叉 詩如此 說 為什麼 這些  
 bhikkhunī pātimokkha uddisati <vatti kim +pana ime  
 f.s.Nom. f.s.Nom. m.s.Loc. pass.ppr.(m.s.Loc.) adv. 3s.opt. adv. m.p.Ins.

一五〇、若比丘尼在誦波提木叉時，她這樣說：

150. Should any bhikkhunī, when the Pātimokha is being recited, say,

khuddānukhuddakehi sikkhāpadehi udditthehi, yāvad’eva kukkuccāya vihesāya  
 小雜 更小 更雜 學處 詩 最多 只 追悔 困擾  
 khudda+anukhuddaka sikkhāpada uddisati kukkucca<(kud 錯誤+kicca 作) vihesa  
 adj. m.p.Ins. n.p.Ins. pp.(m.p.Ins.) adv. n.s.Dat. m.s.Dat.

「為什麼誦出這些細小和更細小的學處呢？最多只是導致追悔、困擾、

“Why are these lesser and minor training rules recited when they lead only to anxiety, bother,

vilekhāya samvattantī” ti. Sikkhāpadavivāñnanake, pācittiyam.  
 迷惑 導致 學處 講誇 犯懺悔  
 vilekha samvattati sikkhāpada+<vivāñneti pācittiya  
 m.s.Dat. 3p.pr. n. m.s.Loc. adj.(f.s.Nom.)

迷惑而已。」當毀謗學處，犯懺悔。

and confusion?" the criticism of the training rules is to be confessed.

### 151.Mohanasikkhāpadam(不因)無知(而開脫罪狀) (=Bhikkhu P 73)

151. Yā pana bhikkhunī anvaḍḍhamāsam pātimokkhe uddissamāne evam vadeyya,  
 任何 比丘尼 隨 半個月 波提木叉 詠 如此 說  
 bhikkhunī anu+adḍha+māsa pātimokkha uddisati vadati  
 f.s.Nom. f.s.Nom. adj. m.s.Acc. m.s.Loc. ppr.(m.s.Loc.) adv. 3s.opt.

五一、若比丘尼每半個月在誦波提木叉時，她這樣說：

151. Should any bhikkhunī, when the Pātimokkha is being recited every half-month, say,

“Idān’eva kho aham ayye, ājānāmi, ayam’pi kira dhammo suttāgato suttapariyāpanno  
 現在 才 我 大姐 知道 這 也 真的 規則 (戒)經 (傳)來 (戒)經 包含  
 idān’eva aham ā-jānāti dhamma sutta+āgata sutta+paryāpanna  
 adv. s.Nom. f.s.Voc. 1s.pr. m.s.Nom. m.s.Nom. n. pp.(m.s.Nom.) n. pp.(m.s.Nom.)

anvaḍḍhamāsam uddesam āgacchatī” ti.

每半個月 詠 來  
 anu+adḍha+māsa uddisati āgacchatī  
 adj. m.s.Acc. m.s.Acc. 3s.pr.

「大姐！現在我才知道，這條規則確實也在(戒)經中傳承、包含在(戒)經中，每半個月誦出來。」

“Just now have I learned that this case, too, is handed down in the Pātimokkha, is included in the Pātimokkha, and comes up for recitation every half-month”;

Tañce bhikkhuniṁ aññā bhikkuniyo jāneyyam,”nisinnapubbam imāya bhikkhuniyā  
 這 如果 比丘尼 其他 諸比丘尼 知道 坐下 出席 以前 這 比丘尼  
 tarī bhikkhunī añña bhikkhunī jānāti <nisidati pubba bhikkhunī  
 f.s.Acc. f.s.Acc. adj.(f.p.Nom.) f.p.Nom. 3p.opt. pp.(f.s.Acc.) f.s.Ins. f.s.Ins.

如果其他比丘尼知道這位比丘尼，

and if the bhikkhunīs should know,

dvittikkhattum pātimokkhe uddissamāne ko pana vādo bhiyyo”ti.  
 二 三 次 波提木叉 詠 何況 說 較多  
 dvi+ti+khattum patimokkha uddissati <vadati bhiyya  
 m.s.Acc. m.s.Loc. ppr.(m.s.Loc.) m.s.Nom. m.s.Nom.

誦波提木叉時這位比丘尼以前出席過兩三次，更何況說(她已出席)多次。

“That bhikkhunī has already sat through two or three recitations of the Pātimokkha,

Na ca tassā bhikkhuniyā aññāñakena mutti atthi, yañca tattha āpattim āpannā,  
 不 而且 這 比丘尼 無知 免除 開脫 彼 且 這裡 犯錯 犯  
 bhikkhunī a+ññaka muñcati ya ca āpatti āpajjati  
 f.s.Gen. m.s.Gen. m.s.Ins. m.s.Nom. 3s.pr. m.s.Acc. adv. f.s.Acc. pp.(f.s.Nom.)

這位比丘尼既不因無知而開脫，而且應如法地處理(她)在此所犯的錯，  
if not more,” the bhikkhunī is not exempted for being ignorant. Whatever the offense  
she has committed, she is to be dealt with in accordance with the rule;

tañca yathādhammo kāretabbo, uttari cassā moho āropetabbo,  
此 且 如法 處理 進一步 且 她 愚痴 加上  
ta yathā+dhamma karoti ca ta moha <āruhati  
m.s.Acc. m.s.Nom. grd.(m.s.Nom.) f.s.Dat. m.s.Nom. caus.grd.(m.s.Nom.)

(僧團)並應進一步加上愚癡(的罪)給她：

and in addition, her deceit is to be exposed:

“tassā te, ayye, alābhā, tassā te dulladdham, yam tvam pātimokkhe udissamāne  
這 妳 大姐 無利益 這 妳 難得到 那 妳 波提木叉 詠出  
sa tvam a+lābhati ta tvam du+lābhati ya tvam pātimokkha uddisati  
f.s.Gen. f.s.Dat. f.s.Voc. m.s.Dat. f.s.Gen. s.Dat. m.s.Acc. m.s.Nom. s.Nom. m.s.Loc. ppr.(m.s.Loc.)

na sādhukam atthim katvā manasikarosi”ti.  
不 好好地 目標 做 意 作  
sādhuka attha+ karoti (=atthikatvā) manasa + karoti  
adv. ger. 2s.pr.

「大姐！這(誦戒)對妳沒有獲益，這(誦戒)對妳難以獲益，妳在誦波提木叉時不  
好好地集中目標注意(聽)。」

“It is no gain for you, lady, it is ill-done, that when the Pātimokkha is being recited,  
you do not pay proper attention and take it to heart.”

Idam tasmim mohanake, pācittiyam.  
這 它 導致愚癡 犯懺悔  
ta mohanaka pācittiya  
m.s.Nom. m.s.Loc. m.s.Loc. adj.(f.s.Nom.)

因為導致愚癡，這犯懺悔。

As for the deception, is to be confessed.

## 152.Pahārasikkhāpadam 打(比丘尼) (=Bhikkhu P 74)

152. Yā pana bhikkhunī bhikkhuniyā kupitā anattamanā pahāram dadeyya, pācittiyam.  
任何 比丘尼 比丘尼 生氣 不 適意 打 擊 紿予 犯懺悔  
ya bhikkhunī bhikkhunī kupita an+attamana paharati dadati pācittiya  
f.s.Nom. f.s.Nom. f.s.Dat. adj.(f.s.Nom.) adj.(f.s.Nom.) m.s.Acc. 3s.opt. m.s.Nom.

一五二、若比丘尼憤怒不悅而打比丘尼，犯懺悔。

152. Should any bhikkhunī, angered and displeased, give a blow to (another) bhikkhunī, it is  
to be confessed.

## 153.Talasattikasikkhāpadam(舉)掌作武器(=Bhikkhu P 75)

153. Yā pana bhikkhunī bhikkhuniyā kūpitā anattamanā talasattikām uggireyya, pācittiyām.

任何	比丘尼	比丘尼	生氣	不 適意	手掌	武器的	舉起	犯懺悔
f.s.Nom.	bhikkhunī	bhikkhunī	kupita	an+attamana	tala +	sattika	uggirati	pācittiya

一五三、若比丘尼憤怒不悅，對著比丘尼舉起手掌當作武器，犯懺悔。

153. Should any bhikkhunī, angered and displeased, raise the palm of her hand against (another) bhikkhunī, it is to be confessed.

## 154.Amūlakasikkhāpadam 無憑無據地(毀謗比丘尼) (=Bhikkhu P 76)

154. Yā pana bhikkhunī bhikkhuniṁ amūlakena saṅghādisesena anuddhaṁseyya, pācittiyām.

任何	比丘尼	比丘尼	無 根據	僧殘	毀謗	犯懺悔
f.s.Nom.	bhikkhunī	bhikkhunī	a+mūlaka	saṅghādisesa	anuddhaṁseti	pācittiya

一五四、若比丘尼無憑無據地毀謗比丘尼犯僧殘戒，犯懺悔。

154. Should any bhikkhunī charge a bhikkhunī with an unfounded Saṅghādisesa (offense), it is to be confessed.

## 155.Sañciccasikkhāpadam 故意(導致比丘尼追悔) (=Bhikkhu P 77)

155. Yā pana bhikkhunī bhikkhuniyā sañcicca kukkuccām upadaheyya, “itissā muhuttampi

任何	比丘尼	比丘尼	故意地	追悔	引起 加予	如此 她	一下子 也
f.s.Nom.	bhikkhunī	bhikkhunū	adv.	kukkucca	upadahati	iti+ ta	muhutta + pi

aphāsu bhavissatī”ti etad eva paccayām karitvā anaññām, pācittiyām.

不安	有	如此	正是	原因	做	非 其它	犯懺悔
a+phāsu	bhavati		paccaya	karoti	an+añña	pācittiya	

一五五、若比丘尼故意導致比丘尼追悔，(想著)：「這樣(一來)，她就會有一下子的不安」。就因這樣的理由而做，不是其它理由，犯懺悔。

155. Should any bhikkhunī purposefully provoke anxiety in (another) bhikkhunī, (thinking,) “This way, even for just a moment, she will have no peace” — doing it for just that reason and no other — it is to be confessed.

## 156.Upassutisikkhāpadam(比丘尼諍論後)竊聽(=Bhikkhu P 78)

156. Yā pana bhikkhunī bhikkhunīnam bhaṇḍanajātānam kalahajātānam vivādāpannānam

任何	比丘尼	諸比尼	諍論	發生	吵嘴	發生	口角	達到
f.s.Nom.	bhikkhu	bhikkhunī	bhaṇḍana+janati	kalaha+janati	vivāda+āpajjati			

一五六、若比丘尼站著竊聽發生過諍論、吵嘴或口角的比丘(的談話)，

upassutim tiṭṭheyya, “yam imā bhaṇissanti, tam sossāmī”ti. Etad eva paccayām  
竊聽 站立 這 她們 說 此 聽 如此 原因

upassuti	tiṭṭhati	imari	bhaṇati	suṇāti		paccaya		
m.s.Acc.	3s.opt.	m.s.Acc.	f.p.Nom.	3p.fut.	m.s.Acc.	1s.fut.	m.s.Acc.	m.s.Acc.

(心想)：「我要聽聽她們在說什麼」，就因這樣的的理由而做，

karitvā anaññam,	pācittiyam.	
做	其它	犯懺悔
karoti	an+añña	pācittiya
ger.	adj.(m.s.Acc.)	adj.(f.s.Nom.)

不為其它理由，犯懺悔。

156. Should any bhikkhunī stand eavesdropping on bhikkhunīs when they are arguing, quarreling, and disputing, thinking, “I will overhear what they say” — doing it for just that reason and no other — it is to be confessed.

~Dīṭṭhivaggo pannarasamo niṭṭhito.~

## Dhammadikavaggosolasamo 依法品第十六

### 157.Kammappaṭibāhanasikkhāpadam 拒絕羯磨(=Bhikkhu P 79)

157. Yā pana bhikkhunī dhammadikānam kammānam chandaṁ datvā pacchā								
任何	比丘尼	依法	羯磨	處置	同意	興欲	給予	後來
bhikkhunī	f.s.Nom.	dhammika	kamma	chanda	dadati			
f.s.Nom.	f.s.Nom.	m.p.Dat.	m.p.Dat.	m.s.Acc.	ger.			adv.

khiyyanadhammaṁ	āpajjeyya,	pācittiyam.	
批評	落入	到達	犯懺悔
khiyyana(=khiyana)+dhamma	āpajjati	pācittiya	
n.	m.s.Acc.	opt.(3s.pr.)	adj.(f.s.Nom.)

一五七、若比丘尼(未出席)，(而委託餘比丘尼)表明同意如法的羯磨，後來卻批評(那)羯磨，犯懺悔。<sup>1</sup>

157. Should any bhikkhunī, having given consent (by proxy) to a transaction carried out in accordance with the rule, later complain (about the act), it is to be confessed.

### 158.Chandam-adatvāgamanasikkhāpadam 沒有表明同意(如法羯磨) (=Bhikkhu P 80)

158. Yā pana bhikkhunī saṅghe vinicchayakathāya vattamānāya chandaṁ adatvā								
任何	比丘尼	僧團	調查	決定	事情	舉行	同意	未 紿予
bhikkhunī	f.s.Nom.	saṅgha	vinicchaya+kathā	m.	f.s.Loc.	vatteti	chanda	a+dadati
f.s.Nom.	f.s.Nom.	m.s.Loc.	m.	f.s.Loc.	ppr.(m.s.Loc.)	m.s.Acc.	ger.	ger.

utṭhāyāsanā	pakkameyya,	pācittiyam.	
起立	座位	離開	犯懺悔
utṭhāya+āsana	pakkamati	paccittiya	
ger.	n.s.Abl.	opt.(pr.3.s.)	adj.(f.s.Nom.)

<sup>1</sup> 《四分比丘尼戒本》(T22.1036.2)：「若比丘尼與欲竟，後更呵者，波逸提。」

## 一五八、若比丘尼在僧團討論事情時，沒有表明同意(如法羯磨)就起座離開，犯懺悔。

158. Should any bhikkhunī, when deliberation is being carried on in the Community, get up from her seat and leave without having given consent, it is to be confessed.

### 159.Dubbalasikkhāpadam 批評如法分配衣服(=Bhikkhu P 81)

159. Yā pana bhikkhunī samaggena saṅghena cīvaraṁ datvā pacchā khiyyanadhammāṁ

任何	比丘尼	和諧	僧團	衣服	給予	之後	批評 (分配)事情
f.s.Nom.	bhikkhunī	samagga	saṅgha	cīvara	dadati		khiyyana+dhamma

āpajjeyya “yathāsanthutam bhikkhuniyo saṅghikam lābhām pariṇāmenti”ti, pācittiyam.									
落入	到達	如	交誼	熟識	諸比丘尼	僧團的	獲得物	挪(給某人使)用	犯懺悔
āpajjati	yathā+santhuta	bhikkhunī	saṅghika	labhati	pariṇāmati		pācittiyam		
3s.opt.	adv.	pp.(m.s.Acc.)	f.p.Nom.	m.s.Acc.	m.s.Acc.	3p.caus.	adj.(f.s.Nom.)		

## 一五九、若比丘尼在和合的僧團分給(某比丘尼)衣服後批評(那)分配，說：「諸比丘尼依照交情挪用僧團獲得的物品」，犯懺悔。

159. Should any bhikkhunī, (acting as part of) a united Community, give robe-cloth (to an individual bhikkhunī) and later complain, “The bhikkhunīs apportion the Community’s gains according to friendship,” it is to be confessed.

### 160.Pariṇāmanasikkhāpadam 轉移(供養) (=Bhikkhu P 82)

160. Yā pana bhikkhunī jānam saṅghikam lābhām pariṇataṁ puggalassa pariṇāmeyya, pācittiyam.

任何	比丘尼	知道	僧團的	獲得物	供養	人	轉送	犯懺悔
f.s.Nom.	bhikkhunī	jānāti	saṅghika	lābhāti	pariṇāmati	puggala	pariṇāmati	pācittiyam
	f.s.Nom.	m.s.Acc.	adj.(m.s.Acc.)	m.s.Acc.	pp.(m.s.Acc.)	m.s.Dat.	caus.3s.opt.	adj.(f.s.Nom.)

## 一六〇、若比丘尼明知而挪用供養僧團的物品給個人，犯懺悔。

160. Should any bhikkhunī knowingly divert to an individual gains that had been allocated for a Community, it is to be confessed.

### 161.Ratanasikkhāpadam 寶物(=Bhikkhu P 84)

161. Yā pana bhikkhunī ratanaṁ vā ratanasammataṁ vā aññatra ajjhārāmā vā ajjhāvasathā

任何	比丘尼	寶物	或	寶物	認為	或	除了	道場	或	住處
f.s.Nom.	bhikkhunī	ratana		ratana+sammannati			adhi+ārāma	adhi+āvasatha		
	f.s.Nom.	n.s.Acc.		n.	pp.(m.s.Acc.)		m.s.Abl.	m.s.Abl.		

vā uggaṇheyya vā uggaṇhāpeyya vā, pācittiyam. Ratanam vā pana bhikkhuniyā									
或	撿拾	或	使撿拾	或	犯懺悔	寶物	或	又	比丘尼
uggaṇhāti	uggaṇhāti			pācittiyam	ratana			bhikkhunī	
3s.opt.	caus.3s.opt.			m.s.Nom.	n.s.Nom.			f.s.Ins.	

ratanasammataṁ vā ajjhārāme vā ajjhāvasathe vā uggaṇhetvā vā uggaṇhāpetvā vā									
寶物	認為	或	道場	或	住處	或	撿拾	或	使撿拾
ratana+sammannati			adhi+ārāma		adhi+āvasatha		uggaṇhāti		uggaṇhāti
n.	m.s.Nom.		m.s.Loc.		m.s.Loc.		ger.		caus.ger.

一六一、若比丘尼除了在(自己的)道場或住處，撿拾或叫人撿拾寶物或被認為是寶物的東西，犯懺悔。而在自己的道場或住處撿拾或叫人撿拾後，寶物或被認為是寶物的東西，

nikkhipitabbam “yassa bhavissati so harissatī” ti. Ayam tattha sāmīci.  
 放置 那人 將有 他 帶走 這 這裡 正確的  
 nikkipati ya bhavati ta harati f.s.Nom. m.s.Gen. 3s.fut. m.s.Nom. 3s.fut. f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom.

應該被比丘尼保存(而考慮)：「那擁有的人會(來)帶走」。在這裡這是正確的(做法)。

161. Should any bhikkhunī pick up or have (someone) pick up a valuable or what is considered a valuable, except in a monastery or in a dwelling, it is to be confessed. But when a bhikkhunī has picked up or had (someone) pick up a valuable or what is considered a valuable (left) in a monastery or in a dwelling, she is to keep it, (thinking,) “Whoever it belongs to will (come and) fetch it.” This is the proper course here.

## 162. Sūcigharasikkhāpadam 針盒(=Bhikkhu P 86)

162. Yā pana bhikkhunī atṭhimayam vā dantamayam vā visānamayam vā sūcigharam  
 任何 比丘尼 骨 製 或 (象)牙 製 或 (獸)角 製 或 針 盒  
 ya bhikkhunī atṭhi+maya danta+maya visāna+maya sūci+ghara  
 f.s.Nom. f.s.Nom. n. adj.(n.s.Acc.) n. adj.(n.s.Acc.) n. adj.(n.s.Acc.) f. n.s.Acc.

kārāpeyya, bhedanakam, pācittiyam.  
 使人作 值得打破的 犯懺悔  
 karoti bhedanaka pācittiya  
 caus.3s.opt. adj.(m.s.Acc.) m.s.Nom.

一六二、若比丘尼叫人作骨製、象牙<sup>1</sup>製或獸角製的針盒，犯懺悔，(而且針盒)應打破。

162. Should any bhikkhunī have a needle box made of bone, ivory, or horn, it is to be broken and confessed.

## 163. Mañcapīṭhasikkhāpadam 新床或長板凳(=Bhikkhu P 87)

163. Navam pana bhikkhuniyā mañcam vā pītham vā kārayamānenā atṭhaṅgulapādakam  
 新 又 比丘尼 床 或 長板凳 或 使作 八 指 腳的  
 nava bhikkhunī mañca pītha kāreti atṭha+aṅgula+pādaka  
 adj.(m.s.Acc.) f.s.Ins. m.s.Acc. n.s.Acc. caus.ppr.(m.s.Ins.) n. adj.(m.s.Nom.)

一六三、比丘尼叫人作新床或長板凳時，腳可以作八(善逝)指的指長，

kāretabbarā Sugataṅgulena, aññatra hetthimāya atāniyā.  
 使作 善逝 指 除了 底部 槿頭  
 kāreti Sugata+aṅgula hetthima atāni  
 adj.(m.s.Nom.) m. n.s.Ins. adj.(m.s.Abl.) adj.(m.s.Abl.)

除了下面的接榫部份，由於超過這(長度)，

<sup>1</sup> Pāci.IV,167(CS:Pāci.pg.217)：「牙，即象牙(hathidanto)」。

Tam atikkāmentiyā, chedanakam, pācittiyam.

這	超過	切除	犯懺悔
ta	atikkāmaya	chedaka	pācittiya
m.s.Acc.	adj.(f.s.Abl.)	m.s.Acc.	adj.(f.s.Nom.)

犯懺悔，(而且過長部份)應切除。<sup>1</sup>

163. When a bhikkhunī is having a new bed or bench made, it is to have legs (at most) eight fingerbreadths long — using Sugata fingerbreadths — not counting the lower edge of the frame. In excess of that it is to be cut down and confessed.

164. Tūlonaddhasikkhāpadam 鋪蓋棉花(在床或長板凳上) (=Bhikkhu P 88)

164. Yā pana bhikkhunī mañcam vā pīṭham vā tūlonaddham kārāpeyya, uddālanakam, pācittiyam.

任何	比丘尼	床	或	長板凳	或	棉花	包裝	使作	扯掉	犯懺悔
bhikkhunī	mañca	pīṭha	tūla+onaddha< nandh	kārāpeti	uddālanaka	pācittiya				
f.s.Nom.	f.s.Nom.	m.s.Acc.	n.s.Acc.	pp.(m.s.Acc.)	caus.3s.opt.	adj.(m.s.Acc.)	m.s.Nom.			

一六四、若比丘尼叫人鋪蓋棉花<sup>2</sup>在床或長板凳上，犯懺悔，而且棉花□應拿掉。

164. Should any bhikkhunī have a bed or bench upholstered, it (the upholstery) is to be torn off and confessed.

165. Kanḍuppaṭicchādisikkhāpadam 覆瘡衣(=Bhikkhu P 90)

165. Kanḍuppaṭicchādim pana bhikkhuniyā kārayamānāya pamāṇikā kāretabbā.

疥癬	覆蓋	又	比丘尼	使製作	按照尺寸	應使作
kanḍu+paticchādī	f.s.Acc.	bhikkhunī	kāreti	pamāṇikā	kāreti	
		f.s.Ins.	ppr.(m.s.Ins.)	f.s.Nom.	grd.(f.s.Nom.)	

一六五、當比丘尼叫人做覆瘡衣時，應該按照尺寸。這裡的尺寸是這樣：

Tatr' idam pamāṇam, dīghaso catasso vidatthiyo Sugatavidatthiyā tiriyaṁ dve vidatthiyo.

這裡	這	尺寸	長	四	掌距	善逝	掌距	寬	二	掌距
tatra		pamāṇa	dīgha		vidatthiyo	Sugata+vidatthi	tiriya		vidatthi	
adv. n.s.Nom.	n.s.Nom.	m.s.Abl.			f.p.Nom.	m.	f.s.Gen.	n.s.Acc.	f.p.Nom.	

長四善逝張手、寬二善逝張手，

Tam atikkāmentiyā, chedanakam, pācittiyam.

超過	切除	犯懺悔
atikkāmaya	chedanaka	pācittiya
m.s.Acc. adj.(f.s.Abl.)	m.s.Acc.	adj.(f.s.Nom.)

由於超過這(尺寸)，犯懺悔，(而且超過的部份)應剪掉。

165. When a bhikkhunī is having a skin-eruption covering cloth made, it is to be made to the standard measurement. Here the standard is this: four spans — using the Sugata span — in length, two spans in width. In excess of that, it is to be cut down and confessed.

<sup>1</sup> 《四分比丘尼戒本》(T22.1036.2)：「若比丘尼，作繩床若木床，足應高佛八指，除入柱孔上，若截竟過者，波逸提。」

<sup>2</sup> tūla，棉花。Pāci.IV,170(CS:Pāci.pg.220)：「棉花有三種——木棉、葛棉、草棉。」(cf. Vin. II,p.150)。

## 166.Nandasikkhāpadam 難陀(比丘尼叫人做衣服超過善逝衣尺寸) (=Bhikkhu P 92)

166. Yā pana bhikkhunī Sugatacīvaraappamāṇam cīvaraṁ kārāpeyya atirekam vā, chedanakam,  
 任何 比丘尼 善逝 衣 尺寸 衣 使製作 超 或 切除  
 bhikkhunī Sugata+cīvara+pamāṇa cīvara kāreti atireka chedanaka  
 f.s.Nom. f.s.Nom. m. n.s.Acc. n.s.Acc. caus.3s.opt. m.s.Acc. m.s.Acc.

**一六六、若比丘尼叫人做衣服，(同於)善逝衣尺寸或超過，**

pācittiyam. Tatr' idam Sugatassa Sugatacīvaraappamāṇam, dīghaso nava vidatthiyo  
 犯懺悔 這裡 這 善逝 善逝 衣 尺寸 長 九 指距  
 pācittiya Sugata Sugata+cīvara+pamāṇa dīgha vidatthi  
 adj.(f.s.Nom.) adv. n.s.Nom. m.s.Gen. m. n. n.s.Nom. m.s.Abl. f.p.Nom.

**犯懺悔，(而且超過的部份)應剪掉。這裡的善逝的善逝衣尺寸是這樣：**

Sugatavidatthiyā tiriyaṁ cha vidatthiyo. Idam Sugatassa Sugatacīvaraappamāṇanti.  
 善逝 掌距 寬 六 掌距 這 善逝 善逝 衣 尺寸  
 Sugata+vidatthi tiriya vidatthiya Sugata Sugata+cīvara+pamāṇa +ti  
 m. f.s.Gen. n.s.Acc. f.p.Nom. m.s.Nom. m.s.Gen. m. n. n.s.Nom.

**長九善逝張手、寬六善逝張手。這是善逝的善逝衣尺寸。**

166. Should any bhikkhunī have a robe made the size of the Sugata robe or larger, it is to be cut down and confessed. Here, the size of the Sugata robe is this: nine spans — using the Sugata span — in length, six spans in width. This is the size of the Sugata's sugata robe.

~Dhammadikavaggo solasamo niṭṭhito.~

Uddiṭṭhā kho, ayyāyo, chasaṭṭhisatā pācittiyā dhammā.

誦 大姐 一百六十六 犯懺悔 規則  
 uddisati f.p.Voc. adj.(m.p.Nom.) m.p.Nom.

**諸大姐！一百六十六懺悔的規則已經誦出了。**

The ladies, the one hundred sixty-six Rules entailing Expiation have been recited.

Tatth'āyyāyo, pucchāmi: Kacci'ttha parisuddhā?  
 這裡 諸大姐 我問 是否 於此 清淨  
 adv. f.p.Acc. 1s.pr. ind. adv. m.p.Nom.

**在這裡我問諸大姐：「妳們於此(類戒)是否清淨？」**

Herein I ask the ladies : Are you pure in this?

Dutiyam'pi pucchāmi: Kacci'ttha parisuddhā?  
 第二 也 問 是否 是 清淨  
 dutiyam + api pucchati kacci + ettha <pp. of parisujjhati  
 m.s.Acc. ind. 1s.pr. ind. adv. m.p.Nom.

**第二次我再問：「妳們於此(類戒)是否清淨？」**

For the second times I ask the ladies : Are you pure in this?

Tatiyam'pi pucchāmi: Kacci'ttha parisuddhā?  
 第三 也 問 是否 是 清淨  
 tatiyam + api pucchatī kacci ettha <pp. of parisujjhati  
 m.s.Acc. ind. 1s.pr. ind. adv. m.p.Nom.

**第三次再問：「妳們於此(類戒)是否清淨？」**

For the third times I ask the ladies : Are you pure in this?

Parisuddh'etth'āyyāyo, tasmā tuṇhī, evam etam dhārayāmi.  
 清淨 在此 大姐 因此 沈默 如此 這 認為  
 parisuddhā + ettha ta tuṇhi evam̄ eta dharati  
 pp.(m.p.Nom.) adv. f.p.Nom. m.s.Abl. adv. adv. m.s.Acc. 1s.pr.

**諸大姐於此(類戒)是清淨的，所以默然。我如此認定這件事。**

The ladies are pure herein; that is why they are silent. So do I record it.

~Pācittiyā nitthitā.~

## Pātidesanīyā 八應悔過戒(八提舍尼法)

Ime kho panāyyāyo atṭha pātidesanīyā dhammā uddesam āgacchanti.  
 這些 又 大姐 八 應悔過、應認過 規則 詩 聞  
 pana pātideseti dhamma <uddesati āgacchati  
 m.p.Nom. adv. f.p.Voc. grd.(m.p.Nom.) m.p.Nom. m.s.Acc. 3p.pr.

**諸大姐！現在到了誦出這八應悔過戒。**

Now, the ladies, the Eight Rules that must be Confessed come up for recitation.

### \*1.Sappiviññāpanasikkhāpadam(無病)索求酥

1. Yā pana bhikkhunī agilānā sappiṁ viññāpetvā bhuñjeyya, pātidesetabbaṁ tāya bhikkhuniyā<sup>1</sup>  
 任何 比丘尼 無 病 酥 告知 食 應悔過 這 比丘尼  
 ya pana bhikkhunī a+gilāna sappi viññāpeti bhuñjati pātidesetabbaṁ ta bhikkhuni  
 f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom. adj.(f.s.Nom.) n.s.Nom. ger. 3s.opt. grd. f.s.Ins. f.s.Ins.

**一、若比丘尼，無病索求酥而食者，此比丘尼應悔過：**

1. Should any bhikkhunī, not being ill, ask for ghee and consume it, she is to acknowledge it:

“gārayham, ayye, dhammam āpajjim asappāyam pātidesanīyam, tam pātidesemī”ti.  
 卑賤的 大姐 法 犯、進入 無益的 應悔過 此 悔過  
 gārayha dhamma āpajji asappāya pātidesanīya tam pātidesemi  
 adj.(m.s.Nom.) f.s.Voc. m.s.Nom. aor. adj.(m.s.Nom.) grd. m.s.Acc. 1s.pr.

「大姐！我犯卑賤的、無益的法而應悔過，我為此悔過。」

“Lady, I have committed a blameworthy, unsuitable act that ought to be acknowledged. I acknowledge it.” [1.~8. Bhikkhus’ Pācittiya 39]

### \*2.Telaviññāpanasikkhāpadam(無病)索求油

2. Yā pana bhikkhunī agilānā telam viññāpetvā bhuñjeyya, paṭidesetabbam tāya bhikkhuniyā  
 任何 比丘尼 無 病 油 告知 食 應悔過 這 比丘尼  
 ya pana bhikkhunī a+gilāna tela viññāpeti bhuñjati paṭidesetabbam ta bhikkhuni  
 f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom. adj.(f.s.Nom.) n.s.Nom. caus. ger. 3s.opt. grd. f.s.Ins. f.s.Ins.

二、若比丘尼，無病索求油而食者，此比丘尼應悔過：

2. Should any bhikkhunī, not being ill, ask for oil and consume it, she is to acknowledge it:

“gārayham, ayye, dhammam āpajjim asappāyam pāṭidesanīyam, tam paṭidesemī”ti.  
 卑賤的 大姐 法 犯、進入 無益的 應悔過 此 悔過  
 gārayha dhamma āpajji asappāya pāṭidesanīya tam paṭidesemi  
 adj.(m.s.Nom.) f.s.Voc. m.s.Nom. aor. adj.(m.s.Nom.) grd. m.s.Acc. 1s.pr.

「大姐！我犯卑賤的、無益的法而應悔過，我為此悔過。」

“Lady, I have committed a blameworthy, unsuitable act that ought to be acknowledged. I acknowledge it.”

### \*3.Madhuviññāpanasikkhāpadam(無病)索求蜜

3. Yā pana bhikkhunī agilānā madhum viññāpetvā bhuñjeyya, paṭidesetabbam tāya bhikkhuniyā  
 任何 比丘尼 無 病 蜜 告知 食 應悔過 這 比丘尼  
 ya pana bhikkhunī a+gilāna madhu viññāpeti bhuñjati paṭidesetabbam ta bhikkhuni  
 f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom. adj.(f.s.Nom.) n.s.Nom. ger. 3s.opt. grd. f.s.Ins. f.s.Ins.

三、若比丘尼，無病索求蜜而食者，此比丘尼應悔過：

3. Should any bhikkhunī, not being ill, ask for honey and consume it, she is to acknowledge it:

“gārayham, ayye, dhammam āpajjim asappāyam pāṭidesanīyam, tam paṭidesemī”ti.  
 卑賤的 大姐 法 犯、進入 無益的 應悔過 此 悔過  
 gārayha dhamma āpajji asappāya pāṭidesanīya tam paṭidesemi  
 adj.(m.s.Nom.) f.s.Voc. m.s.Nom. aor. adj.(m.s.Nom.) grd. m.s.Acc. 1s.pr.

「大姐！我犯卑賤的、無益的法而應悔過，我為此悔過。」

“Lady, I have committed a blameworthy, unsuitable act that ought to be acknowledged. I acknowledge it.”

### \*4.Phāṇitaviññāpanasikkhāpadam(無病)索求糖蜜

4. Yā pana bhikkhunī agilānā phāṇitam viññāpetvā bhuñjeyya, paṭidesetabbam tāya bhikkhuniyā

任何 比丘尼 無 病 糖蜜、石蜜 告知 食 應悔過 這 比丘尼  
 ya pana bhikkhunī a+gilāna phānita viññāpeti bhuñjati pañidesetabbam ta bhikkhunī<sup>1</sup>  
 f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom. adj.(f.s.Nom.) n.s.Nom. ger. 3s.opt. grd. f.s.Ins. f.s.Ins.

#### 四、若比丘尼，無病索求糖蜜而食者，此比丘尼應悔過：

4. Should any bhikkhunī, not being ill, ask for sugar/molasses and consume it, she is to acknowledge it:

“gārayham, ayye, dhammam āpajjim asappāyam pāñidesanīyam, tam pañidesemī”ti.  
 卑賤的 大姐 法 犯、進入 無益的 應悔過 此 悔過  
 gārayha dhamma āpajji asappāya pāñidesanīya tam pañidesemi  
 adj.(m.s.Nom.) f.s.Voc. m.s.Nom. aor. adj.(m.s.Nom.) grd. m.s.Acc. 1s.pr.

「大姐！我犯卑賤的、無益的法而應悔過，我為此悔過。」

“Lady, I have committed a blameworthy, unsuitable act that ought to be acknowledged. I acknowledge it.”

#### \*5.Macchaviññāpanasikkhāpadam(無病)索求魚肉

5. Yā pana bhikkhunī agilānā macchañ viññāpetvā bhuñjeyya, pañidesetabbam tāya bhikkhuniyā  
 任何 比丘尼 無 病 魚(肉) 告知 食 應悔過 這 比丘尼  
 ya pana bhikkhunī a+gilāna maccha viññāpeti bhuñjati pañidesetabbam ta bhikkhunī<sup>1</sup>  
 f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom. adj.(f.s.Nom.) m.s.Nom. ger. 3s.opt. grd. f.s.Ins. f.s.Ins.

#### 五、若比丘尼，無病索求魚肉而食者，此比丘尼應悔過：

5. Should any bhikkhunī, not being ill, ask for fish and consume it, she is to acknowledge it:

“gārayham, ayye, dhammam āpajjim asappāyam pāñidesanīyam, tam pañidesemī”ti.  
 卑賤的 大姐 法 犯、進入 無益的 應悔過 此 悔過  
 gārayha dhamma āpajji asappāya pāñidesanīya tam pañidesemi  
 adj.(m.s.Nom.) f.s.Voc. m.s.Nom. aor. adj.(m.s.Nom.) grd. m.s.Acc. 1s.pr.

「大姐！我犯卑賤的、無益的法而應悔過，我為此悔過。」

“Lady, I have committed a blameworthy, unsuitable act that ought to be acknowledged. I acknowledge it.”

#### \*6.Maṁsaviññāpanasikkhāpadam(無病)索求肉

6. Yā pana bhikkhunī agilānā maṁsañ viññāpetvā bhuñjeyya, pañidesetabbam tāya bhikkhuniyā  
 任何 比丘尼 無 病 肉 告知 食 應悔過 這 比丘尼  
 ya pana bhikkhunī a+gilāna mar̄sa viññāpeti bhuñjati pañidesetabbam ta bhikkhunī<sup>1</sup>  
 f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom. adj.(f.s.Nom.) n.s.Nom. ger. 3s.opt. grd. f.s.Ins. f.s.Ins.

#### 六、若比丘尼，無病索求肉而食者，此比丘尼應悔過：

6. Should any bhikkhunī, not being ill, ask for meat and consume it, she is to acknowledge it:

“gārayham, ayye, dhammam āpajjim asappāyam pātidesanīyam, tam paṭidesemī”ti.

卑賤的	大姐	法	犯、進入	無益的	應悔過	此	悔過
gārayha		dhamma	āpajji	asappāya	pātidesanīya	tam	paṭidesemi
adj.(m.s.Nom.)	f.s.Voc.	m.s.Nom.	aor.	adj.(m.s.Nom.)	grd.	m.s.Acc.	1s.pr.

「大姐！我犯卑賤的、無益的法而應悔過，我為此悔過。」

“Lady, I have committed a blameworthy, unsuitable act that ought to be acknowledged. I acknowledge it.”

#### \*7.Khīraviññāpanasikkhāpadam(無病)索求乳

7. Yā pana bhikkhunī agilānā khīram viññāpetvā bhuñjeyya, paṭidesetabbam tāya bhikkhuniyā  
任何 比丘尼 無 病 乳 告知 食 應悔過 這 比丘尼  
ya pana bhikkhunī a+gilāna khīra viññāpeti bhuñjati paṭidesetabbarū ta bhikkhunī<sub>f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom. adj.(f.s.Nom.) n.s.Nom. ger. 3s.opt. grd. f.s.Ins. f.s.Ins.</sub>

七、若比丘尼，無病索求乳而食者，此比丘尼應悔過：

7. Should any bhikkhunī, not being ill, ask for milk and consume it, she is to acknowledge it:

“gārayham, ayye, dhammam āpajjim asappāyam pātidesanīyam, tam paṭidesemī”ti.

卑賤的	大姐	法	犯、進入	無益的	應悔過	此	悔過
gārayha		dhamma	āpajji	asappāya	pātidesanīya	tam	paṭidesemi
adj.(m.s.Nom.)	f.s.Voc.	m.s.Nom.	aor.	adj.(m.s.Nom.)	grd.	m.s.Acc.	1s.pr.

「大姐！我犯卑賤的、無益的法而應悔過，我為此悔過。」

“Lady, I have committed a blameworthy, unsuitable act that ought to be acknowledged. I acknowledge it.”

#### \*8.Dadhiviññāpanasikkhāpadam(無病)索求酪

8. Yā pana bhikkhunī agilānā dadhim viññāpetvā bhuñjeyya, paṭidesetabbam tāya bhikkhuniyā  
任何 比丘尼 無 病 酪 告知 食 應悔過 這 比丘尼  
ya pana bhikkhunī a+gilāna dadhi viññāpeti bhuñjati paṭidesetabbarū ta bhikkhunī<sub>f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom. adj.(f.s.Nom.) n.s.Nom. ger. 3s.opt. grd. f.s.Ins. f.s.Ins.</sub>

八、若比丘尼，無病索求酪而食者，此比丘尼應悔過：

8. Should any bhikkhunī, not being ill, ask for curds and consume it, she is to acknowledge it:

“gārayham, ayye, dhammam āpajjim asappāyam pātidesanīyam, tam paṭidesemī”ti.

卑賤的	大姐	法	犯、進入	無益的	應悔過	此	悔過
gārayha		dhamma	āpajji	asappāya	pātidesanīya	tam	paṭidesemi

adj.(m.s.Nom.) f.s.Voc. m.s.Nom. aor. adj.(m.s.Nom.) grd. m.s.Acc. 1s.pr.

「大姐！我犯卑賤的、無益的法而應悔過，我為此悔過。」

“Lady, I have committed a blameworthy, unsuitable act that ought to be acknowledged. I acknowledge it.”

Udditthā	kho,	ayyāyo,	aṭṭha	pāṭidesanīyā	dhammā.
誦		大姐	八	悔過	規則
uddisati		f.p.Voc.		m.p.Nom.	dhamma
pp.(m.p.Nom.)					m.p.Nom.

諸大姐！八悔過的規則已經誦出了。

The ladies, Eight Rules that must be Confessed have been recited.

Tatthāyyāyo,	pucchāmi:	Kacci'ttha parisuddhā?
這裡 諸大姐	我問	是否 於此 清淨
tattha	pucchati	kacci ettha pp. of parisujjhati
adv.	f.p.Acc.	1s.pr. ind. adv. m.p.Nom.

在這裡我問諸大姐：「妳們於此(類戒)是否清淨？」

Herein I ask the ladies : Are you pure in this?

Dutiyam 'pi	pucchāmi:	Kacci'ttha parisuddhā?
第二 也	問	是否 於此 清淨
dutiyam + api	pucchati	kacci ettha pp. of parisujjhati
m.s.Acc. ind.	1s.pr.	ind. adv. m.p.Nom.

第二次我再問：「妳們於此(類戒)是否清淨？」

For the second times I ask the ladies : Are you pure in this?

Tatiyam 'pi	pucchāmi:	Kacci 'ttha parisuddhā?
第三 也	問	是否 於此 清淨
tatiyam + api	pucchati	kacci ettha pp. of parisujjhati
m.s.Acc. ind.	1s.pr.	ind. adv. m.p.Nom.

第三次再問：「妳們於此(類戒)是否清淨？」

For the third times I ask the ladies : Are you pure in this?

Parisuddh'etth 'āyyāyo, tasmā tunhī, evam etam dhārayāmīti.
清淨 在此 大姐 因此 沈默 如此 這 認為
parisuddhā + ettha ta tunhi evam eta dharati +ti
pp.(m.p.Nom.) adv. f.p.Nom. m.s.Abl. adv. adv. m.s.Acc. 1s.pr.

諸大姐於此(類戒)是清淨的，所以默然。我如此認定這件事。

The ladies are pure herein; that is why they are silent. So do I record it.

~Pāṭidesanīyā niṭṭhitā.~

## Sekhiyā 應當學習的戒

Ime kho panāyyāyo, sekhiyā dhammā uddesam āgacchanti.  
 這些 又 大姐 學習 規則 詩 說 來  
 pana+ayyāyo dhamma uddesati āgacchati  
 adv. f.p.Voc. adj.(m.p.Nom.) m.p.Nom. m.s.Acc. 3p.pr.

諸大姐！現在到了誦出這些應當學習的戒。

Now, the ladies, the Rules of Training come up for recitation.

## Parimanḍalavaggopathamo 圓整品第一

### 1.~2. Parimanḍalasikkhāpadam 圓整(穿內裙)

#### 1. Parimanḍalam nivāsessāmī'ti, sikkhā karaṇīyā.

圓 完全	穿內裙	學習	應該
parimanḍala	nīvāseti	sikkhā	karoti
m.s.Acc.	1s.fut.	f.s.Nom.	grd.(f.s.Nom.)

「我要圓整地整齊穿好(內裙)，應當學。」

1.I will wear the lower robe wrapped around (me): a training to be observed.

#### 2. Parimanḍalam pārupissāmī'ti, sikkhā karaṇīyā.

圓 完全	穿上衣	學習	應該
parimanḍala	pārupati	sikkhā	karoti
m.s.Acc.	1s.fut.	f.s.Nom.	grd.(f.s.Nom.)

「我要圓整地整齊穿好(上衣)，應當學。」

2.I will wear the upper robe wrapped around (me): a training to be observed.

### 3.~4. Supatīcchannasikkhāpadam 整齊包好(衣服)

#### 3. Supatīcchannā antaraghare gamissāmī'ti, sikkhā karaṇīyā.

好 包覆	內 屋	我 去	學	應該
su+<paticchādeti	antara+ghara	gacchatī	sikkhā	karoti
pp.(f.s.Nom.)	m. n.s.Loc.	1s.fut.	f.s.Nom.	grd.(f.s.Nom.)

三、「在住宅區，我要包好(衣服)走」，應當學。

3. I will go well-covered in inhabited areas: a training to be observed.

## 4. Suppaṭicchannā antaraghare nisīdissāmī’ti, sikkhā karaṇīyā.

好 包覆 內 屋 我坐 學 應該  
 su+paṭicchādeti antara+ghara niśidati sikkhā karoti  
 pp.(f.s.Nom.) m. n.s.Loc. 1s.fut. f.s.Nom. grd.(f.s.Nom.)

四、「在住宅區<sup>1</sup>，我要包好(衣服)坐」，應當學。

4. I will sit well-covered in inhabited areas: a training to be observed.

## 5.~6.Susaṁvutasikkhāpadam.守護威儀

## 5. Susaṁvutā antaraghare gamissāmī’ti, sikkhā karaṇīyā.

好 防護 內 屋 我去 學 應該  
 su+samvarati antara+ghara gacchati sikkhā karoti  
 pp.(f.s.Nom.) m. n.s.Loc. 1s.fut. f.s.Nom. grd.(f.s.Nom.)

五、「在住宅區，我要好好守護(威儀)走」，應當學。

5. I will go well-restrained in inhabited areas: a training to be observed.

## 6. Susaṁvutā antaraghare nisīdissāmī’ti, sikkhā karaṇīyā.

好 防護 內 屋 我坐 學 應該  
 su+samvarati antara+ghara niśidati sikkhā karoti  
 pp.(f.s.Nom.) m. n.s.Loc. 1s.fut. f.s.Nom. grd.(f.s.Nom.)

六、「在住宅區，我要好好守護(威儀)坐」，應當學。

6. I will sit well-restrained in inhabited areas: a training to be observed.

## 7.~8.Okkhittacakkhusikkhāpadam 垂目而視

## 7. Okkhittacakkhunī antaraghare gamissāmī’ti, sikkhā karaṇīyā.

下垂 眼睛 內 屋 我去 學 應該  
 okkhipati+cakkhu antara+ghara gacchati sikkhā karoti  
 pp.(f.s.Nom.) m. n.s.Loc. 1s.fut. f.s.Nom. grd.(f.s.Nom.)

七、「在住宅區，我要垂目而視走」，應當學。

7. I will go with eyes lowered in inhabited areas: a training to be observed.

## 8. Okkhittacakkhunī antaraghare nisīdissāmī’ti, sikkhā karaṇīyā.

下垂 眼睛 內 屋 我坐 學 應該  
 okkhipati+cakkhu antara+ghara niśidati sikkhā karoti  
 pp.(f.s.Nom.) m. n.s.Loc. 1s.fut. f.s.Nom. grd.(f.s.Nom.)

八、「在住宅區，我要垂目而視坐」，應當學。

8. I will sit with eyes lowered in inhabited areas: a training to be observed.

<sup>1</sup> Pāci.IV,176 (CS:Pāci.pg.228)：「住宅區：有車道、群衆、十字路、住家。」

## 9.~10.Ukkhittakasikkhāpadam 不拉高(衣服)

9. Na ukkhittakāya antaraghare gamissāmī'ti, sikkhā karaṇīyā.

不 拉高	內 屋	我 去	學	應 該
ukkhittaka	antara+ghara	gacchatī	sikkhā	karoti
n.s.Dat.	m.	futs.1s.pr.	f.s.Nom.	grd.(f.s.Nom.)

九、「在住宅區，我不要拉高(衣服)走」，應當學。

9. I will not go with robes hitched up in inhabited areas: a training to be observed.

10. Na ukkhittakāya antaraghare nisīdissāmī'ti, sikkhā karaṇīyā.

不 拉高	內 屋	我 去	學	應 該
ukkhittaka	antara+ghara	nisīdatī	sikkhā	karoti
n.s.Dat.	m.	1s.fut.	f.s.Nom.	grd.(f.s.Nom.)

十、「在住宅區，我不要拉高(衣服)坐」，應當學。<sup>1</sup>

10. I will not sit with robes hitched up in inhabited areas: a training to be observed.

~Parimanḍalavaggo pathamo niṭṭhito.~

## Ujjagghikavaggodutiyo 大笑品第二

## 11.~14.Ujjagghikasikkhāpadam 大笑

11. Na ujjagghikāya antaraghare gamissāmī'ti, sikkhā karaṇīyā.

不 大笑	內 屋	我 去	學	應 該
ujjagghikā	antara+ghara	gacchatī	sikkhā	karoti
f.s.Dat.	m.	1s.fut.	f.s.Nom.	grd.(f.s.Nom.)

十一、「在住宅區，我不要大笑<sup>2</sup>走」，應當學。

11. I will not go laughing loudly in inhabited areas: a training to be observed.

12. Na ujjagghikāya antaraghare nisīdissāmī'ti, sikkhā karaṇīyā.

不 大笑	內 屋	我 去	學	應 該
ujjagghikā	antara+ghara	nisīdatī	sikkhā	karoti
f.s.Dat.	m.	1s.fut.	f.s.Nom.	grd.(f.s.Nom.)

十二、「在住宅區，我不要大笑坐」，應當學。

12. I will not sit laughing loudly in inhabited areas: a training to be observed.

<sup>1</sup> 《四分比丘尼戒本》(T22.1039.1)：「不得反抄衣入白衣舍坐應當學」「不得反抄衣入白衣舍坐應當學」。<sup>2</sup> 笑有六種：1.sita, 面部表情顯露出笑。2.hasita, 輕微移動嘴唇，露出牙端而笑。3.vihasita, 笑出聲。4.upahasita, 笑得頭、肩、臂振動。5.apahasita, 笑得掉下淚水。6.atihasita, 暴笑得整個身體前後振動。1~2 為比丘被允許的笑，3~6 則屬於大笑，不被聖法律所允許。

## Uccasaddasikkhāpadam 大聲戒

13. Appasaddā antaraghare gamissāmī'ti, sikkhā karaṇīyā.

小 聲音	內 屋	我 去	學	應 該
appa+sadda	antara+ghara	gacchatī	sikkhā	karoti
f.s.Nom.	m.	n.s.Loc.	1s.fut.	f.s.Nom.    grd.(f.s.Nom.)

十三、「在住宅區，我要小聲(談話)走」，應當學。

13. I will go (speaking) with a lowered voice in inhabited areas: a training to be observed.

14. Appasaddā antaraghare nisīdissāmī'ti, sikkhā karaṇīyā.

小 聲音	內 屋	我 去	學	應 該
appa+sadda	antara+ghara	nisīdatī	sikkhā	karoti
f.s.Nom.	m.	n.s.Loc.	1s.fut.	f.s.Nom.    grd.(f.s.Nom.)

十四、「我要小聲(談話)坐」，應當學。

14. I will sit (speaking) with a lowered voice in inhabited areas: a training to be observed.

## 15.~16.Kāyappacālakasikkhāpadam 不晃動身體

15. Na kāyappacālakam antaraghare gamissāmī'ti, sikkhā karaṇīyā.

不 身體	搖 晃	內 屋	我 去	學	應 該
kāya+pacālaka	antara+ghara	gacchatī	sikkhā	karoti	
m.    n.s.Nom.	m.	n.s.Loc.	1s.fut.	f.s.Nom.    grd.(f.s.Nom.)	

十五、「在住宅區，我不要搖晃身體走」，應當學。

15. I will not go swinging my body in inhabited areas: a training to be observed.

16. Na kāyappacālakam antaraghare nisīdissāmī'ti, sikkhā karaṇīyā.

不 身體	搖 晃	內 屋	我 坐	學	應 該
kāya+pacālaka	antara+ghara	nisīdatī	sikkhā	karoti	
m.    n.s.Nom.	m.	n.s.Loc.	1s.fut.	f.s.Nom.    grd.(f.s.Nom.)	

十六、「在住宅區，我不要搖晃身體坐」，應當學。

16. I will not sit swinging my body in inhabited areas: a training to be observed.

## 17.~18.Bāhuppacālakasikkhāpadam 不揮擺手臂

17. Na bāhuppacālakam antaraghare gamissāmī'ti, sikkhā karaṇīyā.

不 手臂	搖 擺	內 屋	我 去	學	應 該
bāhu + pacālaka	antara+ghara	gacchatī	sikkhā	karoti	
m.    n.s.Nom.	m.	n.s.Loc.	1s.fut.	f.s.Nom.    grd.(f.s.Nom.)	

十七、「在住宅區，我不要揮擺手臂走」，應當學。

17. I will not go swinging my arms in inhabited areas: a training to be observed.

18. Na bāhuppacālakam antaraghare nisīdissāmī'ti, sikkhā karaṇīyā.

不 手臂	搖 擺	內 屋	我 坐	學	應 該
bāhu+pacālaka	antara+ghara	nisīdatī	sikkhā	karoti	
m.    n.s.Nom.	m.	n.s.Loc.	1s.fut.	f.s.Nom.    grd.(f.s.Nom.)	

十八、「在住宅區，我不要擺動手臂坐」，應當學。

18. I will not sit swinging my arms in inhabited areas: a training to be observed.

### 19.~20. Sīsappacālakasikkhāpadam 搖頭晃腦

19. Na sīsappacālakam antaraghare gamissāmī'ti, sikkhā karaṇīyā.

不	頭	搖晃	內	屋	我	去	學	應該
sīsa+pacālaka			antara+ghara		gacchati		sikkhā	karoti
n.	n.s.Nom.		m.	n.s.Loc.	1s.fut.		f.s.Nom.	grd.(f.s.Nom.)

十九、「在住宅區，我不要搖頭晃腦走」，應當學。

19. I will not go swinging my head in inhabited areas: a training to be observed.

20. Na sīsappacālakam antaraghare nisīdissāmī'ti, sikkhā karaṇīyā.

不	頭	搖晃	內	屋	我	坐	學	應該
sīsa+pacālaka			antara+ghara		nisīdati		sikkhā	karoti
n.	n.s.Nom.		m.	n.s.Loc.	1s.fut.		f.s.Nom.	grd.(f.s.Nom.)

二十、「在住宅區，我不要搖頭晃腦坐」，應當學。

20. I will not sit swinging my head in inhabited areas: a training to be observed.

~Ujjagghikavaggo dutiyo niṭṭhito.~

### Kambhakatavaggotatiyo 扱腰品第三

#### 21.~22. Kambhakatasikkhāpadam 扱腰

21. Na khambhakatā antaraghare gamissāmīti sikkhā karaṇīyā.

不	支撐	做	內	屋	我	去	學	應該
khambha+kata			antara+ghara		gacchati		sikkhā	karoti
pp.(f.s.Nom.)			m.	n.s.Loc.	1s.fut.		f.s.Nom.	grd.(f.s.Nom.)

二一、「在住宅區，我不要扶腰走」，應當學。

21. I will not go with arms akimbo in inhabited areas: a training to be observed.

22. Na khambhakatā antaraghare nisīdissāmī'ti, sikkhā karaṇīyā.

不	支撐	做	內	屋	我	坐	學	應該
khambha+kata			antara+ghara		nisīdati		sikkhā	karoti
pp.(m.s.Nom.)			m.	n.s.Loc.	1s.fut.		f.s.Nom.	grd.(f.s.Nom.)

二二、「在住宅區，我不要撐著頭□坐」，應當學。

22. I will not sit with arms akimbo in inhabited areas: a training to be observed.

### 23.~24.Ogunṭhitasikkhāpadam 包著頭

23. Na ogunṭhitā antaraghare gamissāmī’ti, sikkhā karaṇīyā.

不	包覆	內	屋	我	去	學	應該
<ogunṭheti		antara+ghara		gacchati		sikkhā	karoti
pp.(f.s.Nom.)	m.	n.s.Loc.		1s.fut.		f.s.Nom.	grd.(f.s.Nom.)

二三、「在住宅區，我不要包著(頭)走」，應當學。

23. I will not go with my head covered in inhabited areas: a training to be observed.

24. Na ogunṭhitā antaraghare nisīdissāmī’ti, sikkhā karaṇīyā.

不	包覆	內	屋	我	坐	學	應該
<ogunṭheti		antara+ghara		nisīdati		sikkhā	karoti
pp.(m.s.Nom.)	m.	n.s.Loc.		1s.fut.		f.s.Nom.	grd.(f.s.Nom.)

二四、「在住宅區，我不要包著(頭)坐」，應當學。

24. I will not sit with my head covered in inhabited areas: a training to be observed.

### 25.Ukkuṭikasikkhāpadam 以腳尖或腳踵

25. Na ukkuṭikāya antaraghare gamissāmī’ti, sikkhā karaṇīyā.

不	腳尖	內	屋	我	去	學	應該
ukkuṭika		antara+ghara		gacchati		sikkhā	karoti
m.s.Dat.	m.	n.s.Loc.		1s.fut.		f.s.Nom.	grd.(f.s.Nom.)

二五、「在住宅區，我不要以腳尖或腳踵走」，應當學。

25. I will not go tiptoeing or walking just on the heels in inhabited areas: a training to be observed.

### 26.Pallathikasikkhāpadam 抱住膝蓋

26. Na pallathikāya antaraghare nisīdissāmī’ti, sikkhā karaṇīyā.

不	抱住膝蓋	內	屋	我	坐	學	應該
pallathikā		antara+ghara		nisīdati		sikkhā	karoti
f.s.Dat.	m.	n.s.Loc.		1s.fut.		f.s.Nom.	grd.(f.s.Nom.)

二六、「在住宅區，我不要抱住膝蓋坐」，應當學。

26. I will not sit clasping the knees in inhabited areas: a training to be observed.

### 27.Sakkaccapatiggahaṇasikkhāpadam 感激接受

27. Sakkaccam piṇḍapātam paṭiggahessāmī’ti, sikkhā karaṇīyā.

感激	鉢食	我	接受	學	應該
sakkacca	piṇḍapāta		paṭiggahati	sikkhā	karoti
ger.(m.s.Acc.)	m.s.Acc.		1s.fut.	f.s.Nom.	grd.(f.s.Nom.)

二七、「我要心存感激地接受食物」，應當學。

27. I will receive almsfood appreciatively: a training to be observed.

### 28.Pattasaññinīpaṭiggahaṇasikkhāpadam 注視鉢接受

28. Pattasaññī piñḍapātam paṭiggahessāmī’ti, sikkhā karaṇīyā.

鉢	注意	鉢食	我接受	學	應該
patta+saññin	piñḍapāta	paṭiggahati		sikkhā	karoti
m. m.s.Nom.	m.s.Acc.	1s.fut.		f.s.Nom.	grd.(f.s.Nom.)

二八、「我要注視著鉢接受食物」，應當學。

28. I will receive almsfood with attention focused on the bowl: a training to be observed.

### 29.Samasūpakapaṭiggahaṇasikkhāpadam 接受成比例的羹飯

29. Samasūpakam piñḍapātam paṭiggahessāmī’ti, sikkhā karaṇīyā.

等(比例)	羹	鉢食	我接受	學	應該
sama + sūpaka	piñḍapāta	paṭiggahati		sikkhā	karoti
m.s.Acc.	m.s.Acc.	1s.fut.		f.s.Nom.	grd.(f.s.Nom.)

二九、「我要接受與食物成比例的羹<sup>1</sup>」，應當學。

29. I will receive almsfood with bean curry in proper proportion: a training to be observed.

### 30.Samatittikasikkhāpadam 相等(鉢)邊緣

30. Samatittikam piñḍapātam paṭiggahessāmī’ti, sikkhā karaṇīyā.

相等(鉢)邊緣	鉢食	我接受	學	應該
samatittika	piñḍapāta	paṭiggahati	sikkhā	karoti
adj.(m.s.Acc.)	m.s.Acc.	1s.fut.	f.s.Nom.	grd.(f.s.Nom.)

三十、「我要接受食物(只)齊鉢緣(內)」，應當學。

30. I will receive almsfood level with the edge (of the bowl): a training to be observed.

~Khambhakatavaggo tatiyo niṭṭhito.~

## Sakkaccavaggocatuttho 感激品第四

### 31.Sakkaccabhuñjanasikkhāpadam 感激

31. Sakkaccaṁ piñḍapātam bhuñjissāmī’ti, sikkhā karaṇīyā.

感激	鉢食	我吃	學	應該
sakkacca	piñḍapāta	bhuñjati	sikkhā	karoti
ger.(m.s.Acc.)	m.s.Acc.	1s.fut.	f.s.Nom.	grd.(f.s.Nom.)

三一、「我要心存感激地吃飯」，應當學。

<sup>1</sup> Pāci.IV,190 (CS:Pāci.pg.249)：「羹(sūpakaṁ)：有兩種，綠豆(mugga)羹、蠶豆(māsa)羹。」

31. I will eat almsfood appreciatively: a training to be observed.

### 32.Pattasaññinibhuñjanasikkhāpadam 注視鉢吃

32. Pattasaññī piñḍapātam bhuñjissāmī'ti, sikkhā karaṇīyā.

鉢	注意	鉢食	我吃	學	應該
patta+saññin		piñḍapāta	bhuñjati	sikkhā	karoti
m.	m.s.Acc.	m.s.Acc.	1s.fut.	f.s.Nom.	grd.(f.s.Nom.)

三二、「我要注視著鉢吃飯」，應當學。

32. I will eat almsfood with attention focused on the bowl: a training to be observed.

### 33.Sapadānasikkhāpadam 順序地(用餐)

33. Sapadānam piñḍapātam bhuñjissāmī'ti, sikkhā karaṇīyā.

順序	鉢食	我吃	學	應該
sapadāna	piñḍapāta	bhuñjati	sikkhā	karoti
adj.(m.s.Acc.)	m.s.Acc.	1s.fut.	f.s.Nom.	grd.(f.s.Nom.)

三三、「我要順序(不挑東挑西)地用餐」，應當學。

33. I will eat almsfood methodically: a training to be observed.

### 34.Samasūpakasikkhāpadam 等(比例)菜

34. Samasūpakam piñḍapātam bhuñjissāmī'ti, sikkhā karaṇīyā.

等(比例)	菜	鉢食	我吃	學	應該
sama+sūpaka		piñḍapāta	bhuñjati	sikkhā	karoti
m.s.Acc.	m.s.Acc.		1s.fut.	f.s.Nom.	grd.(f.s.Nom.)

三四、「我要成比例地吃飯與(四分之一的)菜」，應當學。

34. I will eat almsfood with bean curry in proper proportion: a training to be observed.

### 35.Nathūpakatasikkhāpadam 不從頂端揉捏食物而吃

35. Na thūpato omadditvā piñḍapātam bhuñjissāmī'ti, sikkhā karaṇīyā.

不	頂端	揉捏	鉢食	我吃	學	應該
thūpa	omaddati		piñḍapāta	bhuñjati	sikkhā	karoti
m.s.Abl.	ger.		m.s.Acc.	1s.fut.	f.s.Nom.	grd.(f.s.Nom.)

三五、「我不(將鉢內食物做成塔形而)從頂端揉捏食物來吃」，應當學。

35. I will not eat almsfood taking mouthfuls from a heap: a training to be observed.

### 36.Odanappaticchādanasikkhāpadam 覆藏飯

36. Na sūpam vā byañjanam vā odanena paṭicchādessāmi bhiyyokamyataṁ upādāyā'ti,

不	菜	或	佐料	或	飯	覆藏	更多	想要	因於
sūpa		byañjana		odana	paṭicchādati		bhiyyo+kamyata		upādāyā
m.s.Acc.	n.s.Acc.			m.n.s.Ins.	1s.fut.		adj.	m.s.Acc.	ger.adv.

sikkhā karaṇīyā.

學	應該
sikkhā	karoti

f.s.Nom. grd.(f.s.Nom.)

**三六、「我不用飯蓋住菜或佐料，以求更多的(菜或佐料)」，應當學。**

36. I will not hide bean curry and foods with rice out of a desire to get more: a training to be observed.

### 37. Sūpodanaviññattisikkhāpadam 要求飯菜

37. Na sūpaṁ vā odanāṁ vā agilānā attano atthāya viññāpetvā bhuñjissāmī'ti, sikkhā karaṇīyā.

不	菜	或	飯	或	無病	自己	需要、利益	要求	食用	學	應該
sūpa	odana	a+gilāna	attan	attha	viññāpeti	bhuñjati	sikkhā	karoti			
m.s.Acc.	m.s.Acc.	f.s.Nom.	m.s.Gen.	m.s.Dat.	ger.	1s.fut.	f.s.Nom.	grd.(f.s.Nom.)			

**三七、「無病時，我不要為了自己的需要(主動)要求菜或飯來吃」，應當學。**

37. Not being ill, I will not eat rice or bean curry that I have requested for my own sake: a training to be observed.

### 38. Ujjhānasaññinīsikkhāpadam 心存不滿(注意他人的鉢)

38. Na ujjhānasaññī paresāṁ pattāṁ olokessāmī'ti, sikkhā karaṇīyā.

不	不滿	想	其他	鉢	注視	學	應該
ujjhāna+saññin	para	patta	oloketi		sikkhā	karoti	
n.	m.s.Nom.	m.p.Gen.	m.s.Acc.	1s.fut.	f.s.Nom.	grd.(f.s.Nom.)	

**三八、「我不心存不滿而看注意別人的鉢」，應當學。**

38. I will not look at another's bowl intent on finding fault: a training to be observed.

### 39. Kabaśasikkhāpadam(不做過大的)飯糰

39. Nātimahantaṁ kavaḍaṁ karissāmī'ti, sikkhā karaṇīyā.

不	過大	飯糰	作	學	應該
na+atimahanta	kavaḍa	karoti	sikkhā	karoti	
adj.(m.s.Acc.)	m.s.Acc.	1s.fut.	f.s.Nom.	grd.(f.s.Nom.)	

**三九、「我不要做過大的飯糰」，應當學。**

39. I will not take an extra-large mouthful: a training to be observed.

### 40. Ālopasikkhāpadam 一口(食物)

40. Parimaṇḍalaṁ ālopaṁ karissāmī'ti, sikkhā karaṇīyā.

圓的	一口(食物)	做	學	應該
parimaṇḍala	ālopa	karoti	sikkhā	karoti
m.s.Acc.	m.s.Acc.	1s.fut.	f.s.Nom.	grd.(f.s.Nom.)

**四十、「我要做圓的飯糰」，應當學。**

40. I will make a rounded mouthful: a training to be observed.

~Sakkaccavaggo catuttho niṭṭhito.~

## Kabaļavaggopāñcamo 飯糲品第五

### 41.Anāhaṭasikkhāpadam 未拿來(張口待食)

41.	Na anāhaṭe	kavale	mukhadvāram	vivarissāmī' ti,	sikkhā karaṇīyā.
	不 未 拿 來	飯 糜	嘴 門	打 開	學 應 該
	anāharati	kavala (=kabala)	mukha+dvāra	vivarati	sikkhā karoti
	pp.(m.s.Loc.)	m.n.s.Loc.	n. n.s.Acc.	1s.fut.	f.s.Nom. grd.(f.s.Nom.)

四一、「我不要飯糲未送至(嘴吧)時就張開口」，應當學。

41. I will not open the mouth when the mouthful has yet to be brought to it: a training to be observed.

### 42.Bhuñjamānasikkhāpadam 食時(勿放整個手指入嘴)

42.	Na bhuñjamānā sabbam̄ hattham̄ mukhe pakkhipissāmī' ti,	sikkhā karaṇīyā.	
	不 吃 時	全 部 手(指) 嘴 放 入	
	bhuñjati	sabba hattha mukha pakkhipati	學 應 該
	ppr.(f.s.Nom.) adj.(m.s.Acc.)	m.s.Acc. n.s.Loc. 1s.fut.	f.s.Nom. grd.(f.s.Nom.)

四二、「我(送)食時不要放整個手指進入嘴裡」，應當學。

42. I will not insert the whole hand into the mouth while eating: a training to be observed.

### 43.Sakabalasikkhāpadam 含飯糲(說話)

43.	Na sakavalena mukhena byāharissāmī' ti,	sikkhā karaṇīyā.	
	不 含 有 飯 糜	嘴 說 話	
	sa+kavala	mukha vyāharati	學 應 該
	m.n.s.Ins.	n.s.Ins. 1s.fut.	f.s.Nom. grd.(f.s.Nom.)

四三、「我不要口含飯糲說話」，應當學。

43. I will not speak with the mouth full of food: a training to be observed.

### 44.Piñdukkhepakasikkhāpadam 投入食物(入口)

44.	Na piñdukkhepakam bhuñjissāmī' ti,	sikkhā karaṇīyā.	
	不 食 物 投 入	我 吃 學 應 該	
	piñda+ukkhepaka	bhuñjati sikkhā karoti	f.s.Nom. grd.(f.s.Nom.)
	m. m.s.Acc.	1s.fut.	

四四、「我不要以投擲食物(入口的方式)來吃」，應當學。

44. I will not eat from lifted balls of food: a training to be observed.

### 45.Kabalāvacchedakasikkhāpadam 咬斷飯糲

45.	Na kabalāvacchedakam bhuñjissāmī' ti,	sikkhā karaṇīyā.	
	不 飯 糜 咬 斷	我 吃 學 應 該	
	kavalā+ava-chedaka	bhuñjati sikkhā karoti	f.s.Nom. grd.(f.s.Nom.)
	m.n. m.s.Acc.	1s.fut.	

四五、「我不要咬斷飯糰來吃」，應當學。

45. I will not eat nibbling at mouthfuls of food: a training to be observed.

#### 46. Avagañḍakārakasikkhāpadam(大口)張頰(吃)

46. Na avagañḍakārakam bhuñjissāmī'ti, sikkhā karaṇīyā.

不	膨脹	做	我吃	學	應該
ava-gaṇḍa-kāraka	bhuñjati		sikkhā	karoti	
m.s.Acc.	1s.fut.		f.s.Nom.	grd.(f.s.Nom.)	

四六、「我不要(大口)張頰來吃」，應當學。

46. I will not eat stuffing out the cheeks: a training to be observed.

#### 47. Hatthaniddhunakasikkhāpadam 甩手地(吃)

47. Na hatthaniddhūnakam bhuñjissāmī'ti, sikkhā karaṇīyā.

不	手	甩	我吃	學	應該
hattha+niddhunaka	bhuñjati		sikkhā	karoti	
m.	m.s.Acc.		f.s.Nom.	grd.(f.s.Nom.)	

四七、「我不要甩手地吃」，應當學。

47. I will not eat shaking (food off) the hand: a training to be observed.

#### 48. Sitthāvakārakasikkhāpadam 飯粒散落

48. Na sitthāvakārakam bhuñjissāmī'ti, sikkhā karaṇīyā.

不	飯粒	散落	我吃	學	應該
sittha+avakāraka	bhuñjati		sikkhā	karoti	
n.	m.s.Acc.		f.s.Nom.	grd.(f.s.Nom.)	

四八、「我要不散落飯粒地吃」，應當學。

48. I will not eat scattering lumps of rice about: a training to be observed.

#### 49. Jivhānicchārakasikkhāpadam 舌頭伸出

49. Na jivhānicchārakam bhuñjissāmī'ti, sikkhā karaṇīyā.

不	舌頭	伸出	我吃	學	應該
jivhā+niccharati	bhuñjati		sikkhā	karoti	
f.	m.s.Acc.		f.s.Nom.	grd.(f.s.Nom.)	

四九、「我不要伸出舌頭地吃」，應當學。

49. I will not eat sticking out the tongue: a training to be observed.

#### 50. Capucapukārakasikkhāpadam 作咀嚼聲

50. Na capucapukārakam bhuñjissāmī'ti, sikkhā karaṇīyā.

不	咀嚼聲	作	我吃	學	應該
capu+capu+kāraka	bhuñjati		sikkhā	karoti	
m.s.Acc.	1s.fut.		f.s.Nom.	grd.(f.s.Nom.)	

五十、「我不要咀嚼出聲地吃」，應當學。

50. I will not eat smacking the lips: a training to be observed.

~Kabalavaggo pañcamo niṭṭhito.~

## Surusuruvaggochaṭṭho 嘸嘸品第六

### 51.Surusurukārakasikkhāpadam(吃時)作嘸嘸聲

51. Na surusurukārakam bhuñjissāmī’ti, sikkhā karaṇīyā.

不	嘸嘸聲	作	我吃	學	應該
suru+suru+kāraka		bhuñjati		sikkhā	karoti
adv.(m.s.Acc.)		1s.fut.		f.s.Nom.	grd.(f.s.Nom.)

五一、「我不要嘸嘸吸吮出聲地吃」，應當學。

51. I will not eat making a slurping noise: a training to be observed.

### 52.Hatthanillehakasikkhāpadam 舔手(吃)

52. Na hatthanillehakam bhuñjissāmī’ti, sikkhā karaṇīyā.

不	手	舔	我吃	學	應該
hattha+<nillehati		bhuñjati		sikkhā	karoti
m.	m.n.s.Acc.	1s.fut.		f.s.Nom.	grd.(f.s.Nom.)

五二、「我不要舔著手地吃」，應當學。

52. I will not eat licking the hands: a training to be observed.

### 53.Pattanillehakasikkhāpadam 不舔鉢

53. Na pattanillehakam bhuñjissāmī’ti, sikkhā karaṇīyā.

不	鉢	舔	我吃	學	應該
patta+<nillehati		bhuñjati		sikkhā	karoti
m.	m.n.s.Acc.	1s.fut.		f.s.Nom.	grd.(f.s.Nom.)

五三、「我不要舔著鉢吃」，應當學。

53. I will not eat licking the bowl: a training to be observed.

### 54.Otṭhanillehakasikkhāpadam 不舔嘴唇

54. Na otṭhanillehakam bhuñjissāmī’ti, sikkhā karaṇīyā.

不	嘴唇	舔	我吃	學	應該
otṭha+<nillehati		bhuñjati		sikkhā	karoti
m.n.s.Acc.		1s.fut.		f.s.Nom.	grd.(f.s.Nom.)

五四、「我不舔著嘴唇吃」，應當學。

54. I will not eat licking the lips: a training to be observed.

### 55.Sāmisasikkhāpadam 沾過食物(的手)

55. Na sāmisena hatthena pānīyathālakam paṭiggahessāmī’ti, sikkhā karaṇīyā.

不	有	食物	手	可喝的	水瓶	拿取	學	應該
---	---	----	---	-----	----	----	---	----

sa + āmisa      hattha      pānīya+thālaka      patigganhati      sikkhā      karoti  
 n.s.Ins.      m.s.Ins.      adj.      n.s.Acc.      1s.fut.      f.s.Nom.      grd.(f.s.Nom.)

**五五、「我不要用沾過食物的手來拿飲水瓶」，應當學。**

55. I will not accept a water vessel with a hand soiled by food: a training to be observed.

## 56.Sasitthakasikkhāpadam 含飯粒(任意倒棄)

56. Na sasitthakam pattadhovanam antaraghare chaddessāmīti sikkhā karaṇīyā.

不 具有 飯粒 鉢 洗 內 屋 丟棄 學 應該  
 sa + sitthaka patta+dhovana antara+ghara chaddeti sikkhā karoti  
 n.s.Acc.      m.      n.s.Acc.      m.      n.s.Loc.      1s.fut.      f.s.Nom.      grd.(f.s.Nom.)

**五六、「我不要將含著飯粒的洗鉢水倒棄」，應當學。**

56. I will not, in an inhabited area, throw away bowl-rinsing water that has grains of rice in it: a training to be observed.

## 57.Chattapāṇisikkhāpadam 手(拿)遮陽傘

57. Na chattapāṇissa agilānassa dhammam desissāmīti, sikkhā karaṇīyā.

不 遮陽傘 手 無 病 法 開示 學 應該  
 chatta + pāṇi a+gilāna dhamma deseti sikkhā karoti  
 n.      m.s.Dat.      m.s.Dat.      m.s.Acc.      1s.fut.      f.s.Nom.      grd.(f.s.Nom.)

**五七、「我不要對無病而手(拿)遮陽傘的人說法」，應當學。**

57. I will not teach Dhamma to a person with an umbrella in her hand who is not ill: a training to be observed.

## 58.Daṇḍapāṇisikkhāpadam 手(拿)拐杖

58. Na daṇḍapāṇissa agilānassa dhammam desissāmīti, sikkhā karaṇīyā.

不 拐杖 手 無 病 法 開示 學 應該  
 daṇḍa + pāṇi a+gilāna dhamma deseti sikkhā karoti  
 m.      m.s.Dat.      m.s.Dat.      m.s.Acc.      1s.fut.      f.s.Nom.      grd.(f.s.Nom.)

**五八、「我不要對無病而手(拿)拐杖的人說法」，應當學。**

58. I will not teach Dhamma to a person with a staff in her hand who is not ill: a training to be observed.

## 59.Satthapāṇisikkhāpadam 手(拿)刀

59. Na satthapāṇissa agilānassa dhammam desissāmīti, sikkhā karaṇīyā.

不 刀 手 無 病 法 開示 學 應該  
 sattha+pāṇi a+gilāna dhamma deseti sikkhā karoti  
 n.      m.s.Dat.      m.s.Dat.      m.s.Acc.      1s.fut.      f.s.Nom.      grd.(f.s.Nom.)

**五九、「我不要對無病而手(拿)刀的人說法」，應當學。**

59. I will not teach Dhamma to a person with a knife in her hand who is not ill: a training to be observed.

## 60.Āvudhapāṇisikkhāpadam 手(拿)武器

60. Na āvudhapāṇissa agilānassa dhammāṁ desissāmī’ ti, sikkhā karaṇīyā.

不	武器	拿	無	病	法	開示	學	應該
āvudha+pāṇi		a+gilāna		dhamma		deseti	sikkhā	karoti
n.	m.s.Dat.	m.s.Dat.		m.s.Acc.		1s.fut.	f.s.Nom.	grd.(f.s.Nom.)

六十、「我不要對無病而手(拿)武器的人說法」，應當學。

60. I will not teach Dhamma to a person with a weapon in her hand who is not ill: a training to be observed.

~Surusuruvaggo chattho niṭṭhito.~

## Pādukavaggosattamo 涼鞋品第七

## 61.Pādukasikkhāpadam 穿涼鞋

61. Na pādukārūlhassa agilānassa dhammāṁ desissāmī’ ti, sikkhā karaṇīyā.

不	涼鞋	穿	無	病	法	開示	學	應該
pādukā+ārūlha		a+gilāna		dhamma		deseti	sikkhā	karoti
f.	pp.(m.s.Dat.)	m.s.Dat.		m.s.Acc.		1s.fut.	f.s.Nom.	grd.(f.s.Nom.)

六一、「我不要對無病而穿涼鞋的人說法」，應當學。

61. will not teach Dhamma to a person wearing non-leather footwear who is not ill: a training to be observed.

## 62.Upāhanasikkhāpadam 穿鞋子

62. Na upāhanārūlhassa agilānassa dhammāṁ desissāmī’ ti, sikkhā karaṇīyā.

不	鞋子	穿	無	病	法	開示	學	應該
upāhana+ārūlha		a+gilāna		dhamma		deseti	sikkhā	karoti
n.	pp.(m.s.Dat.)	m.s.Dat.		m.s.Acc.		1s.fut.	f.s.Nom.	grd.(f.s.Nom.)

六二、「我不對無病而穿鞋子的人說法」，應當學。

62. I will not teach Dhamma to a person wearing leather footwear who is not ill: a training to be observed.

## 63.Yānasikkhāpadam 坐在車上

63. Na yānagatassa agilānassa dhammāṁ desissāmī’ ti, sikkhā karaṇīyā.

不	車	乘	無	病	法	開示	學	應該
yāna+gata		a+gilāna		dhamma		deseti	sikkhā	karoti
m.s.Dat.		m.s.Dat.		m.s.Acc.		1s.fut.	f.s.Nom.	grd.(f.s.Nom.)

六三、「我不要對無病而坐在車上的人說法」，應當學。

63. I will not teach Dhamma to a person in a vehicle who is not ill: a training to be observed.

## 64.Sayanasikkhāpadam 躺在床上

64. Na sayanagatassa agilānassa dhammam desissāmī'ti, sikkhā karaṇīyā.

不	床	躺	無 病	法	開示	學	應該
sayana + gata			a+gilāna	dhamma	deseti	sikkhā	karoti
n. m.s.Dat.			m.s.Dat.	m.s.Acc.	1s.fut.	f.s.Nom.	grd.(f.s.Nom.)

六四、「我不要對無病而躺在床上的人說法」，應當學。

64. I will not teach Dhamma to a person lying down who is not ill: a training to be observed.

## 65.Pallathikasikkhāpadam 抱住膝蓋坐著

65. Na pallathikāya nisinnassa agilānassa dhammam desissāmī'ti, sikkhā karaṇīyā.

不	抱住膝蓋	坐	無 病	法	開示	學	應該
pallathikā		niṣīdati	a+gilāna	dhamma	deseti	sikkhā	karoti
f.s.Dat.		pp.(m.s.Dat.)	m.s.Dat.	m.s.Acc.	1s.fut.	f.s.Nom.	grd.(f.s.Nom.)

六五、「我不要對無病而抱住膝蓋坐著的人說法」，應當學。

65. I will not teach Dhamma to a person who sits clasping her knees and who is not ill: a training to be observed.

## 66.Veṭhitasikkhāpadam 繩頭巾

66. Na veṭhitasīsassa agilānassa dhammam desissāmī'ti, sikkhā karaṇīyā.

不	纏繞 頭	無 病	法	開示	學	應該
veṭhita+sīsa		a+gilāna	dhamma	deseti	sikkhā	karoti
pp. n.s.Dat.		m.s.Dat.	m.s.Acc.	1s.fut.	f.s.Nom.	grd.(f.s.Nom.)

六六、「我不要對無病而繩頭巾的人說法」，應當學。

66. I will not teach Dhamma to a person wearing headgear who is not ill: a training to be observed.

## 67.Oguṇṭhitasikkhāpadam 包住頭

67. Na oguṇṭhitasīsassa agilānassa dhammam desissāmī'ti, sikkhā karaṇīyā.

不	包覆 頭	無 病	法	開示	學	應該
oguṇṭhita+sīsa		a+gilāna	dhamma	deseti	sikkhā	karoti
pp. n.s.Dat.		m.s.Dat.	m.s.Acc.	1s.fut.	f.s.Nom.	grd.(f.s.Nom.)

六七、「我不對無病而包住頭的人說法」，應當學。

67. I will not teach Dhamma to a person whose head is covered (with a robe or scarf) and who is not ill: a training to be observed.

## 68.Chamāsikkhāpadam 坐位子

68. Na chamāyām niṣīditvā āsane nisinnassa agilānassa dhammam desissāmī'ti,

不	地上	坐	坐位	坐	無 病	法	開示
chamā	niṣīdati	āsana	nisiṇna	a+gilāna	dhamma	deseti	
f.s.Loc.	ger.	n.s.Loc.	m.s.Dat.	m.s.Dat.	m.s.Acc.	1s.fut.	

sikkhā karaṇīyā.

學 應該  
sikkhā karoti  
f.s.Nom. grd.(f.s.Nom.)

六八、「我坐在地上時，不要對無病而坐在位子的人說法」，應當學。

68. Sitting on the ground, I will not teach Dhamma to a person sitting on a seat who is not ill: a training to be observed.

### 69. Nīcāsanasikkhāpadam 坐高位

69. Na nīce āsane nisīditvā ucce āsane nisinnassa agilānassa dhammarūpa desissāmī' ti,

不 低處	坐位	坐	高	坐位	坐	無 病	法	開示
nīca	āsana	nisīdati	ucca	āsana	nisiinna	a+gilāna	dhamma	deseti
adj.(n.s.Loc.)	n.s.Loc.	ger.	adj.(m.s.Loc.)	m.s.Loc.	m.s.Dat.	m.s.Dat.	m.s.Acc.	1s.fut.

sikkhā karaṇīyā.

學 應該  
sikkhā karoti  
f.s.Nom. grd.(f.s.Nom.)

六九、「我坐在低的位子時，不要對無病而坐在高的位子的人說法」，應當學。應當學。

69. Sitting on a low seat, I will not teach Dhamma to a person sitting on a high seat who is not ill: a training to be observed.

### 70.~71. Thitāsikkhāpadam 坐著

70. Na thitā nisinnassa agilānassa dhammarūpa desissāmī' ti, sikkhā karaṇīyā.

不 站	坐	無 病	法	開示	學	應該
thitati	nisiinna	a+gilāna	dhamma	deseti	sikkhā	karoti
ppr.(f.s.Nom.)	m.s.Dat.	m.s.Dat.	m.s.Acc.	1s.fut.	f.s.Nom.	grd.(f.s.Nom.)

七十、「我站著時，不要對無病而坐著的人說法」，應當學。

70. Standing, I will not teach Dhamma to a person sitting who is not ill: a training to be observed.

### Pacchatogacchantīsikkhāpadam 走在前面(等)

71. Na pacchato gacchantī purato gacchantassa agilānassa dhammarūpa desissāmī' ti,

不 後面	走	前面	走	無 病	法	開示
pacchato	gacchanta	pura	gacchanta	a+gilāna	dhamma	deseti
adv. (f.s.Abl.)	f.s.Nom.	adv.(m.s.Abl.)	m.s.Dat.	m.s.Dat.	m.s.Acc.	1s.fut.

sikkhā karaṇīyā.

學 應該  
sikkhā karoti  
f.s.Nom. grd.(f.s.Nom.)

七一、「我走在後面時，不要對無病而走在前面的人說法」，應當學。

71. Walking behind, I will not teach Dhamma to a person walking ahead who is not ill: a training to be observed.

## 72.Uppathenagacchantīsikkhāpadam(靠著)路邊走

72. Na uppathera gacchantī pathena gacchantassa agilānassa dhammam desissāmī' ti,  
 不 路邊 走 道路 走 無 病 法 開示  
 uppathera gacchanta patha gacchanta a+gilāna dhamma deseti  
 m.s.Ins. f.s.Nom. m.s.Ins. m.s.Dat. m.s.Dat. m.s.Acc. 1s.fut.

sikkhā karanīyā.

學 應該  
 sikkhā karoti  
 f.s.Nom. grd.(f.s.Nom.)

七二、「我靠著路邊走時，不要對無病而走在路上的人說法」，應當學。<sup>1</sup>

72. Walking beside a path, I will not teach Dhamma to a person walking on the path who is not ill: a training to be observed.

## 73.Ṭhitā-uccārasikkhāpadam 站著大(小)便

73. Na ṭhitā agilānā uccāram vā passāvam vā karissāmī' ti, sikkhā karanīyā.  
 不 站 無 病 大便 或 小便 或 作 學 應該  
 ṭhitati a+gilāna uccāra passāva karoti sikkhā karoti  
 ppr.(f.s.Nom.) f.s.Nom. m.s.Acc. m.s.Acc. 1s.fut. f.s.Nom. grd.(f.s.Nom.)

七三、「我無病時不要站著大小便」，應當學。

73. Not being ill, I will not defecate or urinate while standing: a training to be observed.

## 74.Harite-uccārasikkhāpadam 在農作物上大(小)便

74. Na harite agilānā uccāram vā passāvam vā khelam vā karissāmī' ti, sikkhā karanīyā.  
 不 農作物 無 病 大便 或 小便 或 吐 或 作 學 應該  
 harita a+gilāna uccāra passāva khela karoti sikkhā karoti  
 n.s.Loc. m.s.Nom. m.s.Acc. m.s.Acc. m.s.Acc. 1s.fut. f.s.Nom. grd.(f.s.Nom.)

七四、「我無病時不要在農作物上大小便、吐痰」，應當學。

74. Not being ill, I will not defecate, urinate, or spit on living crops: a training to be observed.

## 75.Udake-uccārasikkhāpadam 在水上大(小)便

75. Na udake agilānā uccāram vā passāvam vā khelam vā karissāmī' ti, sikkhā karanīyā.  
 不 水 無病 大便 或 小便 或 吐 或 作 學 應該  
 udaka a+gilāna uccāra passāva khela karoti sikkhā karoti

<sup>1</sup> 《四分比丘戒本》(T22.1040.1)：「人在高經行處，已在下經行處，不應為說法，除病，應當學。」「人在道，已在非道，不應為說法，除病，應當學。」

n.s.Loc.	m.s.Nom.	m.s.Nom.	m.s.Acc.	m.s.Acc.	1s.fut.	f.s.Nom.	grd.(f.s.Nom.)
----------	----------	----------	----------	----------	---------	----------	----------------

七五、「我無病不在水上大小便、吐痰」，應當學。

75. Not being ill, I will not defecate, urinate, or spit in water: a training to be observed.

~Pādukavaggo sattamo niṭṭhito.~

Uditṭhā	kho	ayyāyo	sekhiyā	dhammā.
誦		大姐	眾學	規則
uddisati		f.p.Voc.	m.p.Nom.	dhamma
pp.(m.p.Nom.)				m.p.Nom.

諸大姐！應當學習的規則已經誦出了。

The ladies, the Rules of Training have been recited.

Tatthāyyāyo pucchāmi: Kacci 'ttha parisuddhā?
這裡 大姐 我問 是否 於此 清淨
tattha+ ayyāyo pucchati kacci ettha pp. of parisujjhati
adv. f.p.Acc. 1s.pr. ind. adv. m.p.Nom.

在這裡我問諸大姐：「妳們於此(類戒)是否清淨？」

Herein I ask the ladies : Are you pure in this?

Dutiyam 'pi pucchāmi: Kacci 'ttha parisuddhā?
第二 也 問 是否 於此 清淨
dutiya + api pucchati kacci ettha pp. of parisujjhati
m.s.Acc. ind. 1s.pr. ind. adv. m.p.Nom.

第二次我再問：「妳們於此(類戒)是否清淨？」

For the second times I ask the ladies : Are you pure in this?

Tatiyam 'pi pucchāmi: Kacci 'ttha parisuddhā?
第三 也 問 是否 於此 清淨
tatiya + api pucchati kacci ettha pp. of parisujjhati
m.s.Acc. ind. 1s.pr. ind. adv. m.p.Nom.

第三次再問：「妳們於此(類戒)是否清淨？」

For the third times I ask the ladies : Are you pure in this?

Parisuddh'etth'āyyāyo, tasmā tunhī, evam etaṁ dhārayāmīti.
清淨 在此 大姐 因此 沈默 如此 這 認為
parisuddhā+ ettha ayyāyo ta tunhi evam eta dharati
pp.(m.p.Nom.) adv. f.p.Nom. m.s.Abl. adv. adv. m.s.Acc. 1s.pr.

諸大姐於此(類戒)是清淨的，所以默然。我如此認定這件事。

The ladies are pure herein; that is why they are silent. So do I record it.

~Sekhiyā nitthitā.~

## Adhikaraṇasamathā(七)解決案件的規則

Ime kho pan'āyyāyo sattādhikaraṇasamathā dhammā uddesam āgacchanti.

這些 而 大姐 七 案件 止息 規則 詩 聰 來  
 pana+āyyāyo satta+adhikarana+samatha dhamma uddesati āgacchatī  
 f.p.Voc. n. m.p.Nom. m.p.Nom. m.s.Acc. 3.p.pr.

諸大姐！現在到了誦出七條解決案件的規則<sup>1</sup>。

The ladies, the Seven Rules for the Settlement of Legal Processes come up for recited.

Uppannuppannānam adhikaraṇānam samathāya vūpasamāya,  
 生起 生起 案件 止息 平息  
 upanna+upanna adhikaraṇa samatha vūpasama  
 pp. ppr.(m.p.Gen.) n.p.Gen. m.s.Dat. m.s.Dat.

為了解決平息不斷生起的案件，(有如下的規則：)

For the Settlement, for stilling of legal processes whenever they may arise (there are) : --

### 1. 當面法則 (Adhikaraṇa samathā 2. )

Sammukhāvinayo databbo.

面前、現前 規則 應給予  
 sammukhā+vinaya dadati  
 m.s.Nom. grd.(m.s.Nom.)

一、應遵行當面的法則。

1. A verdict “in the presence of” should be given.

### 2. 憶念法則 (Adhikaraṇa samathā 2. )

Sativinayo databbo.

憶念 原則 應給予  
 sati+vinaya dadati  
 m.s.Nom. grd.(m.s.Nom.)

二、應遵行憶念的法則。

2. A verdict of mindfulness may be given.

---

<sup>1</sup> 七條解決案件的規則：即七滅諍法。

## 3.不再痴狂的法則 (Adhikaraṇa samathā 3. )

Amūlhavinayo databbo.

痴狂 原則 應給予  
 a+mūlha+vinaya dadati  
 m.s.Nom. grd.(m.s.Nom.)

**三、應遵行(宣佈犯者已)不痴狂的法則。**

3. A verdict of past insanity may be given.

## 4.自白 (Adhikaraṇa samathā 4. )

Paṭiññāya kāretabbam.

表白、自白 使作  
 paṭiññā karoti  
 f.s.Dat. m.s.Nom.

**四、依(犯者)表白的內容處理。**

4. Acting in accordance with what is admitted.

## 5.服從多數 (Adhikaraṇa samathā 5. )

Yebhuyyasikā.

多數決定  
 yebhuyyasikā  
 f.s.Nom.

**五、依多數(決定)。**

5. Acting in accordance with the majority.

## 6.處罰犯罪的人 (Adhikaraṇa samathā 5. )

Tassa-pāpiyasakiā

她 惡行者  
 tassā+pāpiyasakiā  
 f.s.Nom.

**六、(處罰)那犯罪的人。**

6. Acting for her (the accused's) further punishment.

## 7.取銷 (Adhikaraṇa samathā 7. )

Tiṇa-vatthārako'ti.

草 遮蓋  
 tiṇa+avatthāraka  
 m. m.s.Nom.

**七、如草覆蓋(土地般，雙方盡棄過惡)。**

## 7. Covering over as with grass.

Udditthā kho ayyāyo satta adhikaraṇasamathā dhammā.

誦	諸大姐	七	案件	解決	規則
uddisati	ayyāyo		adhikarana+samatha		dhamma
pp.(m.p.Nom.)	f.p.Voc.	n.	m.p.Nom.		m.p.Nom.

諸大姐，七條解決案件的規則已經誦出了。

The ladies, the Seven Rules for the Settlement of Legal Processes have been recited.

Tatthāyyāyo pucchāmi, kaccittha parisuddhā,  
 這裡 諸大姐 我問 是否 於此 清淨  
 tattha ayyāyo pucchatī kacci ettha pp. of parisujjhati  
 adv. f.p.Acc. 1s.pr. ind. adv. m.p.Nom.

在這裡我問諸大姐：「妳們於此(類戒)是否清淨？」

Herein I ask the ladies : Are you pure in this?

Dutiyam'pi pucchāmi: Kacci'ttha parisuddhā?  
 第二 也 問 是否 於此 清淨  
 dutiyam + api pucchatī kacci ettha pp. of parisujjhati  
 m.s.Acc. ind. 1s.pr. ind. adv. m.p.Nom.

第二次我再問：「妳們於此(類戒)是否清淨？」

For the second times I ask the ladies : Are you pure in this?

Tatiyam'pi pucchāmi: Kacci'ttha parisuddhā?  
 第三 也 問 是否 於此 清淨  
 tatiyam + api pucchatī kacci ettha pp. of parisujjhati  
 m.s.Acc. ind. 1s.pr. ind. adv. m.p.Nom.

第三次再問：「妳們於此(類戒)是否清淨？」

For the third times I ask the ladies : Are you pure in this?

parisuddh'etth'āyyāyo, tasmā tuṇhī, evametam dhārayāmīti.  
 清淨 在此 大姐 因此 沈默 如此 這 認為  
 parisuddhā+ ettha ayyāyo ta tuṇhi evam eta dharati  
 pp.(m.p.Nom.) adv. f.p.Nom. m.s.Abl. adv. adv. m.s.Acc. 1s.pr.

諸大姐於此(類戒)是清淨的，所以默然。我如此認定這件事。

The ladies are pure herein; that is why they are silent. So do I record it.

~Adhikaraṇasamathā niṭṭhitā(解決案件的規則)~

Udditthaṁ kho ayyāyo nidānam,  
 詌 而 大姐 因緣  
 uddisati kho nidāna  
 pp.(m.s.Nom.) adv. f.p.Voc. m.s.Nom.

**諸大姐！已誦出序言，**

The ladies, the Introduction has been recited,

udditthā attha pārājikā dhammā,  
 詌 八 驅擯 規則  
 uddisati pārājika dhamma  
 pp.(m.p.Nom.) m.p.Nom. m.p.Nom. m.p.Nom.

**已誦出八驅擯戒，**

the eight Rules of Defeat has been recited,

udditthā sattarasa saṅghādisesā dhammā,  
 詌 十七 僧殘 規則  
 uddisati saṅghādisesa dhamma  
 pp.(m.p.Nom.) m.p.Nom. m.p.Nom. pp.(m.p.Nom.)

**已誦出十七僧殘戒，**

the Seventeen Rules entailing Initial and Subsequent Meeting of the Saṅgha have been recited.

udditthā timsa nissaggyā pācittiyā dhammā,  
 詌 三十 捨 饑 規則  
 uddisati pārājika dhamma  
 pp.(m.p.Nom.) m.p.Nom. m.p.Nom. m.p.Nom.

**已誦出三十捨饑戒，**

the Thirty Rules entailing Expiation with Forfeiture have been recited,

udditthā chasatthi satā pācittiyā dhammā,  
 詌 六十六 一百 犯饑悔 規則  
 uddisati pārājika dhamma  
 m.p.Nom. m.p.Nom. m.p.Nom.

**已誦出一百六十六饑悔戒，**

the one hundred sixty-six Rules entailing Expiation has been recited,

udditthā attha pātidesanīyā dhammā,  
 詌 八 悔過 規則  
 uddisati  
 pp.(m.p.Nom.) m.p.Nom. m.p.Nom.

**已誦出八悔過戒，**

the Eight Rules that must be Confessed have been recited,

udditṭhā sekhiyā dhammā,

誦 眾學 規則  
uddisati sekhiya dhamma  
m.p.Nom. m.p.Nom. m.p.Nom.

已誦出眾學戒，

the Rules of Training have been recited,

udditṭhā sattādhikaraṇasamathā dhammā.

誦 七 案件 解決 規則  
uddisati satta+adhikaraṇa+samatha dhamma  
pp.(m.p.Nom.) n. m.p.Nom. m.p.Nom.

已誦出七滅諍戒。

the Seven Rules for the Settlement of Legal Processes have been recited.

Ettakantassa Bhagavato suttāgataṁ suttapariyāpannam

這諸多 彼 世尊 經 傳來 經 包含  
ettaka ta Bhagavant sutta+āgata sutta+pariyāpanna  
m.s.Nom. m.s.Gen. m.s.Gen. m.s.Nom. m.s.Nom.

這諸多傳承、包含於彼世尊的戒口經，

This much is in the Suttavibhaṅga, including in the Suttavibhaṅga, of the Blessed One,

anvadḍhamāsaṁ uddesaṁ āgacchati.

每半月地 誦 去  
anu+aḍḍha+māsa uddisati āgacchati  
adj. m.s.Acc. m.s.Nom. 3s.pr.

每由個月要誦出。

which comes up for recitation each fortnight.

Tattha sabbeḥ’eva samaggehi sammodamānehi avivādamānehi sikkhitabban’ti.

在這裡 一切 都 和合 歡喜 無諍 應學  
sabba samagga sammodamāna a+vivadamāna sikkhati  
m.p.Ins. m.p.Ins. m.p.Ins. m.p.Ins. grd.(m.s.Nom.)

在這(經分別)裡的，大眾都應該和合歡喜無諍地學習。

Herein all shoulld train in concord and agreement without dispute.

~Vitthāruddeso catuttho niṭṭhito.~

~Bhikkhunipātimokkham niṭṭhitam.~

～ 比丘尼波提木叉竟 ～



Nissaye

Vinayapiṭake

Bhikkhunīpātimokkha

比丘尼波提木叉

(巴漢英對照及文法分析)

from Chatṭha Saṅgāyana (CS)

Released by Dhammavassārāma

2552 B.E. (2008A.D.)

出版者：法雨道場

60652 台灣・嘉義縣中埔鄉同仁村柚仔宅 50 之 6 號

Dhammavassārāma

No. 50 - 6, You-Tze-Zhai, Tong-Ren Village,

Chong-Pu, Chiayi 60652, Taiwan

Tel : (886)(5) 253-0029 ; Fax : 203-0813

E-mail : dhammarain@gmail.com

網址 : <http://www.dhammarain.org.tw/>

郵政劃撥：31497093 法雨道場

版次：佛曆 2552 年(公元 2008 年)7 月初版

【 版權聲名：若不增減本書內容，歡迎倡印，免費流通 】

★ 非賣品 ★